This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

17436.41(1)
*

HARVARD
COLLEGE
LIBRARY

CHRYSAL;

OR

THE ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA,

The Adept entranced by the Apparition of Chrysal in his Laboratory.

Vide Vol. I. Chap. I.

Drawn by Burney. *Engraved by Maddocks.*

Published by Hector Mc Lean 113 Strand.

Charles Johnstone

CHRYSAL;

OR THE

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA:

BY AN ADEPT.

A New Edition,

TO WHICH IS NOW PREFIXED

A SKETCH OF THE AUTHOR'S LIFE

EMBELLISHED WITH PLATES

—— —Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To shew Vice its own Image, Virtue its own Likeness,
And the very age and body of the Times
His Form and Pressure. SHAKESPEARE.

In Three Volumes.

VOL. I.

LONDON:
PRINTED FOR HECTOR M'LEAN, 118, STRAND,
BY HOWLETT AND BRIMMER, FRITH STREET, SOHO SQUARE.
1821.

17436.41.(1)

Harvard College Library
Bowle Collection
Gift of
Mrs. E. D. Brandegee
Nov. 9, 1908.
(3 vols)

Sketch

OF

THE AUTHOR'S LIFE.

CHARLES JOHNSTON, or Johnson, author of "Chrysal, or the Adventures of a Guinea," and other works of a similar kind, was a native of Ireland, and descended from a branch of the Johnstons of Annandale. He was born in the early part of the last century, but in what year we have not been able to discover. After receiving a good classical education, he was called to the bar, and came over to England for practice in that profession, but being unfortunately prevented by deafness from attending the courts, he confined himself to the employment of a chamber counsel. It does not appear that his success was great, and embarrassed circumstances rendered him glad to embrace any other employment, in which his talents might have a chance to succeed. His "Chrysal" is said to have been his first literary attempt, two volumes of which he wrote while on a visit to Mount Edgecumbe, the seat of the late Earl of Mount Edgecumbe. He appears to have had recourse to some degree of art, in order to apprize the public of what they were to expect from it. In

the newspapers for April 1760, it is announced that "there will be speedily published, under the emblematical title of the 'Adventures of a Guinea,' a dispassionate, distinct account of the most remarkable transactions of the present times all over Europe, with curious and interesting anecdotes of the public and private characters of the parties principally concerned in these scenes, especially in England; the whole interspersed with several most whimsical and entertaining instances of the intimate connection between high and low life, and the power of little causes to produce great events." This, while it has the air of a puff, is not an unfaithful summary of the contents of these volumes, which were published in May of the same year, and read with such avidity, that the author was encouraged to add two more volumes in 1765, not inferior to the former, in merit or success. The secret springs of some political intrigues on the continent, are unfolded in these volumes, but it was the personal characters of many distinguished statesmen, women of quality, and citizens, which rendered the work palatable. A few of these were depicted in such striking colours as not to be mistaken; and the rest, being supposed to be equally faithful, although less obvious, the public were long amused in conjecturing the originals. In one case, the author occasioned no little confusion among the guilty parties, by unfolding the secrets of a club of profligates of rank, who used to

assemble at a nobleman's villa in Buckinghamshire. In this, as well as other instances, it must be allowed, that although he describes his bad characters as worse than they were, he everywhere expresses the noblest sentiments of indignation against vice and meanness.

A striking instance of his consistency in this respect will be found in a passage where Chrysal relates his coming into the possession of a new master, which is supposed to be no other than the celebrated Charles Churchill, who though the intimate friend and companion of Mr. Johnson was not the less subject to the keenness of his satire. The account runs thus: "the company to which my new master was in such haste to go, consisted of a few persons, whom a similarity of temper had linked in the closest intimacy. With these he spent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which few would dislike, though fewer still could approve it; the spirited wit and liveliness of their conversation gilding the grossest debaucheries; at the same time that the rectitude and sublimity of their sentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity to speak, made the vices of their practice still more horrible by the contrast."* As the incidents to which these observations are prefixed, accord with the character of Churchill, which induced him to follow

* See Page 226, vol. iii.

enthusiastically the first impulses of his heart, there is good reason to believe he was the real hero of the affecting tale.

Mr. Johnston's other publications, of the same kind, delineating in caricature the striking outlines of popular characters and public vices, were, "The Reverie; or a Flight to the Paradise of Fools," 1762, 2 vols. 12mo; "The History of Arbaces, prince of Betlis," 1774, 2 vols.; "The Pilgrim, or a Picture of Life," 1775, 2 vols.; and "The History of John Juniper, Esq. alias Juniper Jack," 1781, 3 vols. None of these, however, attracted the attention of the public in any considerable degree. In 1782, he had some prospect of passing his days in comfort, if not in opulence, in India, and accordingly embarked for Bengal, with Captain Charles Mears, in the Brilliant, which was wrecked off Johanna, an island situated between Madagascar and the continent of Africa; but Captain Mears, with his son and daughter, and Mr. Johnston, and some others, were saved, and ultimately reached India. Here he employed his talents in writing essays for the Bengal Newspapers, under the signature of "Oneiropolos," and at length became a joint proprietor of a paper, and by this and some other speculations, acquired considerable property. He died there about the year 1800.

PREFACE,

BY THE PUBLISHER.

TO acquit myself of the suspicion of presuming to aim at particular characters in the following work, should any fancied likeness be thought to direct an application, as well as to do justice to the real author of it, I think it my duty to make known the manner by which it happened to come into my hands.

As I was walking one morning, last summer, along Whitechapel, I was obliged to take shelter from a shower of rain in a cottage near the turnpike. The family were at breakfast, at their tea, and, as the rain continued, I had leisure to reflect on the advantages of commerce, which thus, in a manner, joins the opposite extremities of the earth, by bringing their products together: at the same time, that the variety in the equipage of the tea-table, or indeed stool, on which 'there was nothing of a piece,' suggested a just ridicule on the vanity of luxury.

This last reflection was extended to all the pursuits of man, on the sight of a piece of written paper, that served instead of a plate to hold their butter. 'Who 'knows,' thought I, 'but the writer of this bestowed 'time and care upon it, and promised himself both 'profit and fame, in reward of his labour?'

This thought raised a curiosity to look at the paper, which, by this time, was scraped quite clean. I therefore, after a few words of conversation, to introduce my request, desired leave to see it, which was readily granted, when I was surprised to find my conjecture, as I imagined, confirmed, by its appearing to be part of some regular work.

Curiosity had now a stronger motive than idle gratification! I asked where they had got that paper; and on their telling me at the chandler's shop next door, though this discouraged me a good deal, I resolved to pursue my inquiry, and went to the shop, as if for some snuff, which, as I expected, was given me on a piece of the same paper.

The rain still giving me a pretence for delaying there, I entered into discourse with the woman, and among other idle questions, asked her where she usually got paper to wrap her wares in, to which she answered,—'Sometimes from the public offices, and 'sometimes from the booksellers and printers; and

'when she was disappointed at those places, she 'was forced to buy brown paper, which was much 'dearer; though at present, she made use of some 'old *stuff* that had lain a great while lumbering her 'garret, having belonged to a lodger of her mother's, 'who died many years ago.'

I then changed the discourse, for fear she should perceive my design; but presently seeing her going to tear more, for somebody else that came in, I could not forbear any longer, but offered her brown paper for all the written paper she had, *as that was most proper for some work I designed*, which she readily agreed to, and sold me her whole stock for eighteen-pence.

This adventure put an end to my walk, so I took the first coach that went by, and hurried home to examine my purchase, which I found to consist of a number of fragments, upon various subjects, whether originally left unfinished, or torn thus in the chandler's shop, it was impossible to say: and, among the rest, the following work, which seemed to have undergone a different, though not much better fate, being blotted in many places, often paragraphs, and sometimes whole pages, being erased; and, what was worst, this havoc was made in the most curious and entertaining part of the whole, the *philosophy of the nature and agency of spirits.*

The oddity of this collection, made me resolve to try if I could learn any thing of the author from the woman of the shop, where I had made my purchase; accordingly I called upon her one evening, as if merely by accident, and sending for a pint of wine, to set her tongue a-going, I no sooner hinted my desire, than she directly gave me the following account, which I shall repeat as nearly as possible, in her own words, shortening it only of expletive exclamations and repetitions.

'My father,' said she, 'dying young, and leaving 'his family but poorly, my mother took this shop to 'help her to bring up three children, of whom I, the 'eldest, was but five years old. The times being 'hard, she was obliged to make every honest shift, 'and therefore took in lodgers; and, among the rest, 'an elderly man, who rented the garret to sleep in, 'and a little turret in the garden, which he fitted up 'for himself for a workshop; but what business he 'followed she never knew, as he let nobody see him 'at work; nor did she trouble herself to inquire, as 'he always paid her punctually: but she imagined 'he was a smith of some sort, from the quantities of 'charcoal he burned, and the constant blowing of 'his bellows.

'In this place he spent all his time, often not quit-'ting it for whole days and nights together, till hun-

'ger has forced him to crawl like a starved rat out of 'his hole, to get a bit of victuals.

'At first my mother was uneasy at this, and ima-'gining he must be *out of his mind*, or troubled in 'conscience, she spoke about him to a worthy gen-'tleman, a clergyman, that lived in the neighbour-'hood; but he coming to see him at a time when he 'had a clean shirt on, and had eat his victuals, and 'slept regularly for some time before, his discourse 'was so sensible and pleasant, that the doctor could 'not help telling him the cause of his visit as a joke 'at my mother, to whom he said, when he was go-'ing away, that, so far from being mad, he believed 'her lodger was the best scholar in the whole parish.

'My mother's good nature had like to have lost 'her her lodger, for, as soon as the doctor was gone, 'he gave her warning, but upon her promising never 'to be guilty of the like indiscretion again, nor to 'trouble herself any farther about him, than just to 'give him what he should call for, he consented to 'stay.

'From that time he lived among us as unnoticed 'as he could desire, following his business without 'disturbance from any one, nor appearing to give 'himself the least trouble about that of any other per-'son living, except it was me, whom he taught to

'read, and said he would make his heir. An unhappy heirship, I am sure, for me; for it hindered 'my marrying Jack Twist, the rope-maker, who is 'the toppingest man in all Radcliff-highway, and 'then offered to take me in my shift.

'But there's no help for that now! Luck is all! 'to be sure we thought he must be some extraordinary man, for he never wanted money, and then we 'used to hear him talk to himself sometimes, as if all 'the world was his own, of *building colleges, and churches, and houses, and altering St. Paul's*, and 'I do not know what great things; and one day in 'particular, I remember he said before us all, that 'before seven years, he would hire an army, that 'should drive the *Pope* and the *Devil* (Lord bless us) 'out of *Rome;* for to be sure, he would talk before 'us, as if we could not hear him, as we would also 'do any thing before him as freely as if he was a cat 'or a dog! Well, as I was saying, it was no wonder, to be sure, that such ignorant poor folks as we, 'should think much of him, especially after what the 'doctor said, and accordingly built great hopes upon 'his promises.

'He went on thus for near twenty years, no soul 'ever coming near him, nor he going out above once 'or twice in a year, and then not staying above an 'hour or two at a time.

'At length his health began to break very much, 'which made my mother often speak to him, not to 'work so hard, for he had been with us so long, and 'was so quiet, and paid so honestly, that we all loved 'him as if he was our father. But her advice was 'all to no purpose; he still went on, bidding her not 'trouble herself, nor be afraid about him. But this 'did not satisfy her; and one day, when he had been 'locked up from the morning before, without having 'any victuals or going to bed, she resolved to break 'through his orders and call him to dinner.

'When she came to the turret, which he called his '*laboratory*, she tapped gently at the door; but re- 'ceiving no answer, nor hearing any noise within, 'she was so frighted, that she called me to fetch the 'kitchen poker, with which we made a shift to force 'it open, when we found the poor man stretched at 'his length upon the floor, to all appearance dead.

'This shocked us greatly; but we did not alarm 'the neighbours, as we imagined there were things 'of value there, that might be misplaced, or taken 'away in the confusion: we therefore raised him up 'ourselves, and after a little while, perceiving signs 'of life, carried him in, and laid him in our own bed, 'and, pouring some drops into his mouth and nose, 'at length brought him to himself; when his first 'care was to inquire for the key of the turret, whe-

'ther any one else had been there, or any thing in 'it stirred: our answers satisfying him, he seemed 'quite easy, and in a little time recovered, to all ap- 'pearance as well as ever.

'From this time, he changed his way of life a good 'deal; and though he was much in the turret, which 'we observed he ever after called his *study*, and not 'his *laboratory*, he never sat up whole nights in it, 'as before, nor bought any more charcoal, nor even 'oil for his lamp, but went to bed orderly when we 'did.

'But this change came too late; for about six 'months after, we found him one morning dead in his 'bed; though he had been as cheary in the evening 'before, as he had for a long time.

'This was a great surprise and concern to us! 'But what avails grief? We must all die, and he 'was a very old man. As soon as we were certain 'that he was dead, the first thing my mother and I 'did, was to go to the turret, impatient enough to 'take possession of our heirship; where, Lord help 'our poor heads! did we find only a few great old 'books, and those papers you got; the very bellows 'and tools, and pots that we saw there before, being 'all gone, and no more sign of a workshop to be 'seen, than if it was not the same place we had been

'in six months before. What he could have done 'with his things we could not imagine, for we never 'observed him to carry them out, so that we con- 'cluded he must have burned them.

'This was a sore disappointment to me, not to men- 'tion the loss to my mother, to whom he owed a 'quarter's rent, besides an account of near twenty 'shillings in the shop; and seven shillings and two- 'pence halfpenny was all the money in his pocket, 'nor did we ever find one penny more after him, 'though we searched close enough!——Well! pa- 'tience is a remedy for all things but death; we 'were forced to submit; though I cannot help griev- 'ing when I think of it, to this day, especially when 'I see Peg Sprout, the green-woman's daughter 'from Wapping, that Jack Twist married out of 'despair, when I refused him, ride by in her chaise, 'like a lady; and it is now thirty years ago!—— 'No! let me see! it will be exactly twenty-nine 'years come next Michaelmas; I am sure I have 'reason to remember it well, for my poor mother 'took it so to heart that she never held up her head 'after, till it finished her, in about nine years; though 'I cannot say but something else might have 'helped, for she took cruelly to drinking drams, 'though as she began it to comfort her for this mis- 'fortune, it was all owing to that; that poor sister 'Bet, too'——

I was obliged to interrupt her here, by asking her, what kind of a person he was, or she would have gone on to give me the history of her whole family.

My curiosity being thus satisfied as to the author, there was but one thing more that I desired to know, and that was, how those papers came to have so many blots made in them, which by the difference of ink, I could see was done long since the first writing? To which she answered, that, some time after the old man's death, her mother let his apartment to one that called himself a clergyman, and was a great scholar, and used to make almanacks, and other books; that he had looked over those papers, and, she believed, taken out such as he liked, and done what he pleased with the rest, for they set no regard on them; and particularly, she remembered to have heard him say, that he would make something of one of them; but she believed he found it would not do, for he soon after left their house, and joining with those methodists that were just then come up, went away with them, preaching about the country.

I thought it but reasonable to reward the good woman's expense of breath, with half-a-crown, and so took my leave, though with a secret resolution to give her half the profit, if there arises any, from the sale of the books; not thinking that such a purchase, as I had made from an ignorant woman, could give

me a just title to the whole *heirship*, as she called it, that had cost her so dear as the loss of her old sweetheart Jack Twist.

This good woman's account, explained to me, in some measure, the nature of this work, for the circumstances of the author, who, I could see, had been a schemer, who had wasted his whole fortune in the search after the *philosopher's stone*, and having his eyes at length opened to his folly, though too late to remedy it, yet was able to divert the grief of his disappointment, by writing these papers, in ridicule of such notions, and from the sale of which he might also expect some relief to his wants.

But, whatever the motive was, the loss is now irreparable, and has reduced the work to the appearance of a novel or romance, almost the whole philosophical part having been erased; for, as to the personal application of any thing in it to the present times, the least attention to this account of the author will shew the absurdity and injustice of such an attempt; as it was wrote so long ago, and by a person so little acquainted with the world, that all the stories in it must necessarily be the mere creatures of imagination.

For the manner in which they are published I shall only say, that it is strictly agreeable to the faith of the text: not one of the many alterations and interpola-

tions, which were in another hand, being given; but wherever I could not clearly make out the very words of the author, I honestly omitted the whole, not thinking it allowable or just, to palm my own words or sentiments upon the world, or the credit of another.

How scrupulous I have been in this point, will appear to any one, who shall take the pains of consulting the original manuscript, which shall be deposited in the public library of one of the universities, as soon as the work is printed. The only liberty I have taken, being in a few notes in the margin, and supplying a connexion, where it was broken by any of the above-mentioned accidents.

CHRYSAL.

CHRYSAL;

OR, THE

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

CHAPTER I.

The apparition of CHRYSAL *to an adept, in the very moment of projection. His account of himself, and the cause of his appearing to the author.*

ON a day, when long and strict abstinence had purified my body from every *terrene* incumbrance, and intense contemplation wound up my mind to an enthusiasm fit for *empyreal* conversation, as I stood with my eyes riveted on the *obstetric* flame, in strong expectation of the birth of the *mystic child, the first-born of the morning*, ready to seize the happy moment, *when the earth, sufficiently impregnated with the water, ascendeth white and splendent, that I might compound the pure elements, before they fly from the fire, and so perfect the great work*; my eyes began to dazzle, and the power of imagination overwhelmed my soul. I saw a blue effulgence break from the liquid gold, and play about the genial vase! —I was astonished! I thought it the *substantial form of the son of the sun!* I thought the happy moment was come, when *the rose of the east should*

bloom in the desart, and mine the favourite hand to cultivate its growth! I indulged the pleasing thought! I melted in the virtuous joy! and, in obedience to the divine impulse, I kneeled to receive the reward of all my labours, *the radiant crown of wisdom and glory*, from the hand of nature, with every sense and faculty suspended, for fear of interrupting the mysterious process.

As my soul hung in this ecstasy, the flame which wrapped the *sacred birth in the bed of purification*, arose with the glory too strong for mortal sense, and filled the room. My senses sunk under the pressure, and I was dissolved into a trance, when a voice, celestially harmonious, encouraged me to raise my eyes, and I beheld *the body of the effulgence condense into an incorporeal substance in the form of a spirit*, while a placid shade softened the fierceness of the radiance, and made it tolerable to human sense.

An holy horror curdled all my blood; but the melody of the same voice, which had before emboldened me to look up, reassured my fainting heart with these words: 'Son of pains and votary of science! thy 'unwearied perseverance has prevailed, and I am 'sent to crown thee with a virgin rose! I am CHRY-'SAL*, the spirit of that incorruptible mass now glow-'ing in that vase before thee, who in reward of thy 'noble constancy in offering this thy last mite, on the 'shrine of knowledge, am come to reveal to thee the 'mysteries of nature, and satisfy that raging thirst for 'wisdom which has so long excruciated thy soul, and 'thus emaciated thy body! And that thou mayest

* This name is evidently derived from Χρυσὸς *Gold*, and may probably signify *Golden*, from her animating a piece of *Gold*; for, by the universal authority of the *occult* philosophy, spirits are always denominated from their office.

'the better comprehend the greatness of this honour 'vouchsafed unto thee, I shall trace the operations of 'nature through her most secret recesses, and illus- 'trate the truth of what I say, by a detail of the va- 'rious incidents of my being, in my present state, to 'prepare thee for the reception and proper use of the '*grand secret*, which I shall afterwards communicate!

'I can see your thoughts; and will answer every 'doubt which may arise in your mind at the wonders 'of my relation without the interruption of your in- 'quiries, as *awful silence is the essence of my converse*, 'the least breach of which puts an end to it for ever! 'listen then in mute attention, nor let a breath dis- 'turb the mystic tale!'—

The works of nature are infinitely various, and her methods of operation inscrutable to the curiosity of that vain intruder, *Reason*, which has of late presumed to pry into her ways, and to doubt, if not deny, the reality of all effects, which her short-sighted eye cannot trace to their causes! a presumption that has justly shortened the line of human knowledge, and condensed the mist of ignorance which overspreads the world! Some noble efforts though I see the nature of man preparing to make, to recover that eminence of *conjecture* and *credulity*, which alone can merit such a communication of extraordinary knowledge as is now indulged to you. Some of the most hidden truths which I shall here unfold, has unassisted genius discovered already; and more shall curious penetration make learned guesses at, even in this sceptic age*.

Know, then, that in the economy of nature, to ease the trouble, and keep up the state of its great author,

* See all the modern hypothetical philosophy.

*"*a subordination of ministerial spirits execute the system of his government in all its degrees; one of whom, for the greater order and expedition, is made to actuate every divided particle of matter in this immense universe.* In this distribution, *that* portion of gold was assigned to my charge, upon its first feeling the influence of the †*etherial fire of the sun, the general minister of the divine commands.* This happened in Peru, where that body of which I then became the spirit, was torn from its peaceful bed, two hundred fathoms deep in the bowels of the earth.

I shall not describe my surprise, at my first plunging into those realms of darkness, nor shall I satisfy the curiosity I see rising in you, whether that period was the beginning of my existence; or whether I was, either as a punishment or reward, for a past, or a preparation for a future life, thrown into this. These are mysteries not yet discovered, though often most learnedly guessed at.—All I shall unfold to you are points already known, or such as I see ready to be found out by human industry, as it would put an end to learning to make a revelation of the objects of its inquiries! Such matters, I say, I shall explain to you, and farther relate some occurrences, the knowledge of which will be equally useful and entertaining, which happened to the several persons with whom I have had intercourse, in the various stages of my present state.

And as you may be at a loss, to know how I could arrive at the knowledge of such facts, many of which

* Essay on Spirit. † Siris.

Would not these, and many other passages of the same nature which support the systems of those celebrated works, almost tempt us to think that the writers of them must have had a communication with this or some such spirit, to come at knowledge so supernatural?

happened long before my converse with those persons, I shall inform you, that, besides that *intuitive knowledge* common to all spirits, we of superior orders, who animate this universal monarch GOLD, have also a power of entering into the hearts of the immediate possessors of our bodies, and there reading all the secrets of their lives. And this will explain to you the cause of that love of gold, which is so remarkable in all who possess any quantity of that metal. **For the operation of every material is in proportion to the strength of the spirit actuating that cause; as the strength of the spirit is reciprocally in proportion to the quantity of his material body*: and consequently, when the mighty spirit of a large mass of gold takes possession of the human heart, it influences all its actions, and overpowers, or banishes, the weaker impulse of those immaterial, unessential notions called *virtues*. And this intuition, and power of transmigration, I have thus explained, to remove every shadow of doubt of what I shall relate.

* Essay on Spirit.

CHAPTER II.

Chrysal gives an account of the person who dug up his body in the mine. The particular manner of his acquiring the knowledge of his life, with an explanation of the nature of memory and consciousness.

THE first object that struck me, when I darted on the power of a sun-beam, into those infernal regions where my body was just dug up, was the person in whose hands it was when I took possession of it.

Dark as the gloom of such a place must be, a melancholy that doubled all the horrors of it, sat upon his brow. He gazed a moment on *me*,* in silent grief, and then groaned out these words with a vehemence that seemed to burst his heart; 'Damned, damned, 'pernicious, damning gold! how dearly do I pur-'chase this momentary possession of thee! But let 'me acknowledge the justice of my fate! I wished 'only for gold, and now, this equivocal grant of that 'wish, is the just punishment of the folly, and the 'wickedness of it.'—Grief here choked his utterance! he could say no more, but sobbed aloud, while all the dreary caverns echoed to his anguish.

Curiosity prompted me to learn the cause of his distress: I therefore immediately entered into his

* *Chrysal* must here mean the *Gold* which now became her body, as she does not say that she appeared in the spirit to any one before the author.

heart, to read the events of his life, which I doubted not but I should find deeply imprinted there: but I was surprised to find that room in it, which, I could plainly see had been possessed by the love of gold, so filled with sense of pain, with grief and remorse, that I could scarce gain admission.

Upon this I mounted into the *sensorium* of his brain, to learn from the spirit of consciousness, which you call SELF, the cause of so uncommon a change, as it is contrary to the fundamental rules of our order, even to give up a heart of which we once get possession.

I found the spirit very busy, though I thought somewhat oddly employed: she was running over a number of *niches*, or impressions, on the fibres of the brain, some of which I observed she renewed with such force, that she almost effaced others, which she passed over untouched, though interspersed among them. The sight of *me* seemed to suspend her works a moment; but as if that pause was only to recover strength, she instantly renewed her labour with great assiduity. I *looked at her*, my desire to know the meaning of what she was doing, and to signify the cause of my visit, to which she returned me this answer, in *a glance* that interrupted not her work.

(I see you wonder, that I speak of this spirit, though the SELF of a man, as if it was a female; but in this there is a mystery, *every spirit is of both sexes*, but as the female is the worthier with us, we take our denomination from that.)

You are surprised, *looked she*, to find me so earnestly engaged in work which you do not understand; but *in this work consists my very essence. This place*

where we are, is the seat of memory; and these traces which you see me running over thus, are the impressions made on the brain by a communication of the impressions made on the senses by external objects.—These first impressions are called IDEAS, *which are lodged in this repository of the memory in these marks, by running which over, I can raise the same* ideas *when I please, which differ from their first appearance only in this, that, on their return, they come with the familiarity of a former acquaintance.**

How this communication is made, I cannot, however, so well inform you; whether it is by the *oscillation of the nervous fibres,* or by the *operation of a certain invisible fluid,* called *animal spirits, on the nerves*; no more than I can explain to you how my touching these marks, on this material substance the brain, can raise *ideas* in the immaterial mind, and with the addition of acquaintance beside; for these are matters not yet settled among the learned.

All I know is, that the thing is agreed to be so, by some, or other, or all of these means, and that my whole employment, and end of being, is to touch them over, and acknowledge their acquaintance thus; without my doing which, a man would no longer continue the same person, for in this acquaintance, which is called *consciousness,* does all personal identity consist.†

As for the work I am just now particularly engaged in, you must know that this man, whom, as I am *his self,* I shall henceforth, for conciseness and perspicuity, call *my self,* was once possessed of, or in power of possessing every real happiness of life,

* See all the modern philosophy. † Locke.

till an insatiable desire of riches hurried him into measures which overturned all that happiness, and in the end plunged him into this gulph of misery.

The traces of that happiness are those which you see me pass over without renewing; by which means he forgets that he was ever happy, except sometimes, when the trace of any particular unhappiness comes so near that of any instance of happiness, as unavoidably to touch it; which touch, by the renewal of the idea of such happiness, only aggravates the sense of the present want of it. And thus *I* make memory either a blessing or a curse, according to the nature of the trace which I *renew*.

I see you are astonished, how a person who was ever happy, could possibly fall into such misery as I am now in; but I shall remove that astonishment, by the history of *my* life, in which I shall accommodate my account of places and things to the circumstances of my present state, without regard to the universality of *our* spiritual nature; and call them by their names among men, without the delay or trouble of description.

CHAPTER III.

The history of Traffic. His father's advice to him; containing some general observations on the nature and end of trade; with rules to insure a success in it.

MY name is Traffic; I was the only son of a wealthy merchant in London, who bred me to his own business. There was nothing remarkable in my youth, except that the characteristic passion of my heart, shewed itself, in the very dawn of reason, in my eagerness to engross and hoard up the baubles of my play-mates, and the far-fetched schemes I laid to over-reach them in all our little bargains.

My father was at first delighted with this cunning, which his fondness took for the first essay of a great genius; but, when he saw me persist in it after I grew up, and attempt to practise the same arts, in the course of my business, it gave him serious alarms for my future conduct; for he had ever been averse to these artifices, which are called *the mysteries of commerce*, and owed his success solely to close application in the plain way of a fair trader.

But this caution I looked upon with contempt, as timidity and want of genius, and, undiscouraged by his constant repulses to all my *bold strokes* and deep schemes, which I was continually suggesting to him,

I resolved, when I should be at liberty, to indulge my own inclinations to strike out new ways, that should afford me opportunities of exerting my abilities in their full strength, and shewing them in their proper lustre.

The vanity which prompted avarice to form these designs, would so often break out in boasting, that my father was fully acquainted with them; and, a sensible decline in his health quickening his apprehensions for me, his tenderness would omit nothing which might shew me my error, in its proper light, and prevent my falling into so destructive ways.

Calling me therefore into his closet, one morning, he addressed me in these words; words which dear experience has now printed deeply on my heart, though then they had no weight with me.

'My son,' said he, 'the day approaches fast, when 'you will be in possession of the fruits of my ho-'nest industry. I leave you a good fortune; and 'have the happiness to be able to tell you, in this try-'ing moment, that no wilful private wrong, or public 'fraud, makes me wish it were by one penny less. 'As therefore it was acquired in the fear of God, if 'not abused, it will wear with his blessing. Habit 'had so wedded me to my business, that I could not 'leave it off myself; and I bred you to it, to indulge, 'as I thought, the bent of your genius, and to prevent 'idleness from tempting youth to folly——But now, 'that dangerous season is past with you; and the 'labour of my life has taken away all necessity of la-'bour from yours. Be wise, then, my son, and enjoy 'that happiness which Heaven offers you, without 'tempting a reverse! You will have riches, more 'than enough, for every natural want, for every ra-

'As for the first, every misrepresentation to mislead ignorance, or abuse credulity, every taking advantage by superior knowledge, is a wrong to the party so deceived; as every artifice to evade the intention of the legislature is a fraud against the public, nay against yourself, and every individual who claims the benefits provided by the ordinances, so defeated of their support.

'This indeed is so obvious, that it were an affront to reason to insist on any proof of it. The most eager pursuer of illicit trade will not vindicate a general indulgence of it; and if it is not lawful for all, how can it be for him? or with what colour can he claim a profit, which he is conscious arises only from deceit, and from the benefit of those very laws which he thus defeats.

'The temptations to this breach of honesty, I own, are many and great, and some of them perhaps plausible; particularly in those branches of trade which seem to bear a more than equal share of the weight imposed for general advantage. But, in opposition to this, it must be considered, that it is impossible to provide so exactly for a thing of so fluctuating a nature as trade, that the balance shall not incline, in some one instance; and that it must, by the same motion which oppresses one, be favourable to some other; and so preserve the equipoise in the whole; and this obviates the only shadow of an argument, that can be brought in defence of this too common practice.

'As for the former, of avoiding private wrong, that is more difficult, and less defensible, if possible, than even this. For where all the powers of the mind are turned to *make* advantage, it is very

'hard to refrain from *taking* it, where we ought not, 'and bringing the great business of life into common 'practice, in its minutest concerns.

'The man whose soul is on the stretch to take ad- 'vantage, in a bargain for thousands, on the Ex- 'change, will be apt, perhaps, insensibly to overlook 'an error that is not to his disadvantage, in a trades- 'man's bill, or to take no notice of a guinea given 'instead of a shilling in change at a tavern, though 'either is as great dishonesty, as if he took them in 'a manner punishable with death by the laws: not 'to mention the innumerable little instances of 'temptation to this kind of wrong, which occur in 'every moment's dealing. '*That we may avoid temp-* '*tation*, is one of the petitions of the Divine prayer, 'and never more necessary to be offered up than in 'this profession, whose constant practice opens in- 'numerable instances of it upon us.

'In a word, my son, there are so many and strong 'arguments of this nature to be given against all 'trade, that the general advantage of the common- 'wealth alone can, in any way, support it against 'them. This, therefore, should be written in the 'deepest characters on the heart of every merchant, '*that he should never let private interest tempt him to* '*engage in any trade or scheme that can interfere* '*with the public interest, or is forbidden by the laws* '*of his country.*——I shall say no more; nor bur- 'then your mind with farther advice.—Observe this, 'and be happy.'

I was obliged to hear him: but his words, at that time, made no more impression on my mind, than the whistling of the winds, nor in the least altered my intentions; though I felt no scruple in promising

obedience, the breach of which could never be upbraided to me, as I could not think of practising it, before his death should remove the only person who had such an authority.

CHAPTER IV.

The history of Traffic continued; His father's death. He continues in trade, and turns schemer. His various schemes end in his ruin. The rise and progress of his passion for Amelia. The base abuse of her confidence, by which he cheated her of the greatest part of her fortune, and afterwards formed dishonourable designs against herself.

THE opportunity which I had long panted for, arrived too soon: my father dying, just after I was of age, and leaving me possessed of wealth sufficient for me to exercise my talents on, as I was not blessed with prudence to take his advice, and put it to its proper use in rational enjoyment.

I was immediately a man of consequence, and that not only in my own eyes. I made a figure upon Change; I signed among the foremost in the public subscriptions. But all this did not satisfy me. I sickened at the thought of having an equal, not only in wealth, the darling object of my soul, but also in the reputation of acquiring it by methods of my own *striking out*, as I looked upon the known course of business as too slow for my advances, and too limited for my genius.

I therefore immediately became a *Schemer*, and entered into every project which my own brain could invent, or artful imposition suggest to me; blindly, wilfully, giving up the serenity of an open mind, for the vain appearance of mysterious consequence and design; and making my fortune a prey to every sharking projector, who flattered my vanity with promises of success, in the very attempts which had been his own ruin.

The perplexity in which this infatuation soon involved my affairs, far from opening my eyes, only set me upon deeper schemes. *Sporting* upon private adventures, *taking in* unwary confidence, *flinging* the fair trader, by eluding the restrictions of law, were now too small a game for me: I was entangled, and must cut the *Gordian knot* by some bold stroke.

I therefore threw off restraint, and entered into measures the most injurious to my country, which was then engaged in a just and extensive war. I insured the effects of its enemies, and of consequence gave them information how to avoid its forces; I carried on their trade with other countries; I supplied them with provisions from ours; and at length went so far as to lend and procure them money to support the war against ourselves.

But all my schemes met their just fate. Though I could give their ships information how to avoid our squadrons, yet they fell into the hands of *unstationed* privateers. My subterfuges for carrying on their trade were seen through, and a stop put to them before I could receive the stipulated profit. The stores I bought for them were intercepted by our fleets, and, to conclude all, the enemy, by one stretch of arbitrary power, refused to pay any debts, and appro-

priated the funds provided for that purpose to the present support of the war.

This finished my ruin: I had not only lent them all my own fortune, but had also borrowed much more to supply them, (on confidence in their promises), than I was now able to pay.

In this situation, the advice of my father returned full upon me, and aggravated my distress. But I had no time for reflection; the horrors of a jail stared me full in the face, which I had no way to avoid but by flight, the equivocalness of my character having made every honest man, who was able to assist me, afraid of being concerned with me. I therefore immediately raised all the money I possibly could, and embarked secretly in a ship of my own for Jamaica; heaven, to make its justice the more signal, using my blackest guilt as a chain to draw me to the vengeance I deserved.

I must stop here, and look back, to give you an account of an affair, which the precipitancy of my ruin prevented my mentioning in its proper order.

Much as such a complicated scene as I have described, must have taken up my time and engrossed my thoughts, I had still found leisure for guilt of another nature, though ultimately springing from the same cause.

I had told you, that my father had acquired his own fortune by industry; but as the greatest industry requires a foundation to work upon, his had been assisted by the person to whom he served his apprenticeship, who, knowing his abilities, and confiding in his honesty, upon the decline of his own health, esta-

blished him in partnership with his only son, whom he thought too young to conduct so extensive a business.

My father faithfully executed this great trust, and continued the partnership, till his observation of my unfortunate disposition determined him to make me quit trade; when it was dissolved, without the least breach in that real friendship which had so long subsisted between them. Though I did not obey my father's desire, yet my vanity would not admit a thought of recommencing the partnership, as it would have been but a curb on my favourite *schemes*, and have implied a want of assistance, which, in my own opinion, I was far above. On the contrary, I rather declined too close a connection with him in business; as I feared he might have taken upon him to interpose his advice against any thing, which his *narrow, fearful* temper might disapprove in my *great* designs; but as I kept up every other appearance of regard, and even respect for him, this shyness was not observed, nor any coolness occasioned by it, in the intercourse of intimacy between us.

But for this conduct I had another motive, besides regard for *him*. He had an only daughter, enriched with every beauty and virtue that could mark the favourite work of heaven: she was about four years younger than me, which difference of age had given me an opportunity of treating her with such a fondness, from her very infancy, as raised a real love in her grateful heart, as her beauties did the strongest one it was capable of feeling in mine. Our fathers had seen this growing attachment, with the greatest pleasure, from the beginning, and encouraged it between us, (our mothers both died in our infancy,

joining in the general opinion, that the union which had always been between their families would be completed by the intermarriage of their children: an opinion that was then my pride, and seemed a pleasure to the young Amelia's honest heart, that was above disguise.

But my father's death, before she was of an age to undertake the cares of such an awful state, and a long illness of her father's after, during which her filial piety and love would not admit a thought of any thing that should interfere with her tender regard for him, prevented my happiness from being accomplished, while there was any obstacle that could hinder my evil genius from defeating it.

At length, after languishing five years, her father died, without a moment's more immediate warning, having been on the Exchange that day as usual.

In the tumult of this loss, I was sent for; and no will being found, for he unhappily had not imagined his end so near, nor made any settlement of his affairs, in the confidence of our attachment, Amelia gave every thing into my hands, and requested me to make up all her father's accounts, and conclude her dealings with the world.

This happened just as my *scheming* had begun to embarrass my affairs. My heart, therefore, never proof to much temptation, yielded to such an opportunity of recovering the losses of my folly at her expense, by *sinking* the greatest part of her fortune to my own use; never considering that I might have the whole in a just and honourable way, enhanced with the greatest blessing of herself.

To accomplish this design, and prepare her for what was to follow, I pretended to Amelia, that I found many difficulties in her father's affairs; and having secreted as much as I thought proper, and could with safety, and destroyed every memorial that might detect me, for all which her unbounded confidence gave ample opportunity, I at length gave her in an account, with the strongest expressions of concern, 'to find that what I had long apprehended was 'too true, and that her father's affairs were in a very 'bad situation; that I had, however, with great difficulty, got together somewhat above ten thousand 'pounds, and was convinced, that this perplexity in 'his affairs, was the occasion of his long illness, and 'had not left him spirit enough to inquire into them, 'and make a will.'

This representation had the effect I designed; Amelia's confidence in me would not admit a thought of my deceiving her; as pride, too powerful in the purest human heart, prevented her revealing her circumstances to any one else, who might have attempted to disprove what I said; though indeed it was scarce natural to suspect me of a deceit, that according to the opinion which then prevailed concerning Amelia and me, could only affect myself.

She therefore, with an appearance of surprise rather than doubt, or even concern, acquiesced, and signed a receipt in full, desiring me to destroy all her father's books and papers, as they could be of no farther use to her.

This completed my design beyond a possibility of detection, and even raised a new one against the poor pittance I had left her, though it was not quite a fourth part of what was really her right: for I had

now thrown off all thoughts of marriage with one *so far beneath me in fortune* looking upon it as a reproach of my wisdom and knowledge of the world, to make any *bargain* in which I should not have the advantage: for what I had so basely defrauded her of, I considered merely as an acquisition of my superior skill in business, and absolutely my own, without any manner of obligation to the person from whom I had obtained it: not that I had lost my *desire* for the person (the only degree of love my heart was capable of feeling), but the advantage I had it now in my hopes of obtaining over her made me look upon her, as a sure prey to my pleasure.

CHAPTER V.

Continued. He cheats Amelia of the residue of her fortune, and marries another woman. Amelia sues him at law, is cast, and goes for Jamaica. He is ruined, and follows her.

THOUGH my whole life was one continued scene of villany, yet in all, there was a gradation, a regular descent from bad to worse; each successful crime opening new opportunities and suggesting schemes which never entered into my thoughts before.

This was exactly my case with regard to Amelia. While she was in possession of her whole fortune, the highest wish of my heart was to marry her; but no sooner had an unhappy accident given me an op-

portunity of defrauding her of far the greatest part of it, than that respectful love immediately sunk into loose desire, and my success in my former schemes against her, set my thoughts at work to accomplish the gratification of this passion, on my own base terms.

To bring this design to perfection, it was necessary that I should get her fortune entirely into my power; which I accordingly formed schemes to accomplish without delay; for the success of my former attempt, so far from satisfying my avarice, or raising any sense of compassion in my breast, for her wrongs, had made me look upon herself, and all that belonged to her, as my property, which I was as impatient to possess as if it was detained from me by injustice.

I therefore took occasion, one day, when we were alone together, to drop some words of concern, at my not having immediately by me, a sum of money to lay out on most advantageous terms, which had been that very morning proposed to me.

She directly took the hint, and said, her little fortune was still in her hands, in the same bank-notes I had given her; and if the use of it, for any time, could be of advantage to me, she should feel a greater pleasure in my taking it, than any profit she could make of it, any other way.

This was just what I wished; and though I could scarce refrain from laughing, at the easiness with which she took the bait, I would not accept of her offer but with this restriction, that I would consider whether the terms proposed to *me* might not suit *her*, and be more advantageous than the interest I could

afford her if I should make use of it myself. I said this with an equivocal smile, which she understood as I would have her, and immediately, with an assenting blush, put the notes into my hand, without requiring a receipt, or any kind of acknowledgment for them.

Having thus gained that which I reckoned the better part of Amelia, and sure, as I imagined, of herself, when necessity should humble her to my designs, as I had her whole means even of subsistence in my power, I directly resolved to close with an offer, some time before made me by a wealthy merchant, of a large fortune, with his daughter, whom I accordingly married, a few days after I had got possession of Amelia's money.

I shall spare myself the pains of any farther description of my wife, than that she was the very reverse of Amelia in soul and body; and my marriage consequently as unhappy as I justly deserved.

But I comforted myself with hopes of happiness in the enjoyment of Amelia, whom I looked upon as my own, and only deferred making my base proposals to, till her resentment at my marriage should cool, and I could devise some plan of privacy to elude the vigilance of my wife. Not but I dreaded the first emotion of her anger, which I expected to break out in loud complaints. But I was mistaken in measuring her soul thus by my own. She scorned to complain; nor did I hear a word from her to interrupt the riot of my wedding. A greatness of soul, so far above my comprehension, that I attributed it to fear of giving offence to one in whose power she must be sensible she was.

But, at the end of the month, I was awoke from those dreams, by a message from her, delivered by a relation of her's, to desire I should pay in her money to him, for which he would give me a receipt. As I was not prepared for this, I believe it threw me into a confusion too visible; but I soon recovered presence of mind enough to answer, that 'I could not 'but be surprised at such a demand, as Amelia must 'be sensible, that I had paid her all the money of 'her's that was in my hands, for which I had her discharge in full.'

The gentleman replied in astonishment, 'Her dis-'charge, Sir! that was when you *settled* her affairs! 'but she says, that she, since then, gave her whole 'fortune into your hands, to lay out for her. And, 'Sir, *my* cousin is known to be neither a fool nor a 'liar; though I believe she has suffered severely for 'her ill-placed confidence.'—'Perhaps she says so, 'Sir, (said I) but I know nothing of the matter, and 'am not accountable for what she says, or you think, 'Sir; and I suppose if your cousin is not a fool, she 'has not given her money without something to shew 'for it. But you must excuse my talking any longer 'on so idle a subject; and so, Sir, your servant.'—— The mine was now sprung, and I waited with impatience for the event. As to her demand, I knew she could never support it, as there was no person present when she gave me the notes; and I had negociated them in a manner, beyond all possibility of their being traced.

While I was hugging myself in this security, the friends of Amelia persuaded her to bring a bill in chancery against me, in which the whole affair was set forth without any exaggeration. But this I made light of, as I had *my lawyer* ready, under whose di-

rections I swore such an answer that set her charge entirely aside.—Elate with this success, I thought this the time to pursue my victory, and wrote her a letter, in which I attributed every thing of my conduct of late, that might have surprised her, to love, and despair of obtaining her by any other method: and offered her a settlement above the demand she had made on me, if she would consent to my desires. This I wrote in such general terms, that my letter could not be brought in evidence against me, and the largeness of the offer was only to decoy her into a treaty, there being nothing farther from my thoughts than ever to make her independent of my pleasure.

This insult only added new fuel to her resentment; and all the answer I received was by another bill; but this met the same fate, by the same methods as the former.

After this I heard no more of Amelia for some time; but what was my astonishment, when I was informed, that she had sold off her jewels, and other little effects, and was gone to a relation of her's who lived in Jamaica! This broke all my designs; and despair of ever obtaining her awoke my love, and aggravated my remorse for my ill usage of her almost to madness.

From this time the hand of Heaven seemed to be upon me; every thing I had any concern in miscarried; and, to hasten my ruin, my house was a perfect sink of riot and debauchery: my wife, as she had no charms to excite desire, in a manner, publicly purchasing the gratification of her lusts at the most extravagant expense, and living in a profusion that must destroy even a royal fortune.

Mine, great as it had been, sunk under so many dissipations of all kinds; and I had no resource left, as I said before, but in precipitate flight, which Heaven made my passion for Amelia direct for Jamaica, to mark the justice of its vengeance the more plainly.

CHAPTER VI.

Conclusion of the history of Traffic. He arrives at Jamaica, where he learns that Amelia had been taken by the Spaniards. He turns buccanier, and ravages the Spanish coasts, where he finds Amelia. Just as he is going to seize her, he is taken prisoner by her husband. He is condemned to die. He sues to Amelia for mercy; she rejects him with abhorrence. His punishment is changed from death to the mines.

I HAD hitherto varnished over my villanies with hypocrisy, and strove to preserve some appearance, at least, of virtue: but this was a restraint no longer possible, nor indeed profitable to me now, when my flight took off the veil, and alarmed all mankind against me; so that mine was really a state of war with all the world.

On my arrival in Jamaica, I had the addition to my grief to find that Amelia had been taken in her passage thither by a Spanish privateer.

This drove me to despair: I was wearied of life; but resolved not to die unrevenged on those who had

thus, as I thought, robbed me of my hopes; never reflecting on the improbability of her hearkening to my suit.

Burning with this project, I fitted out my ship, and manned her with a crew as desperate as myself; resolving, though the war was at an end, to pursue my revenge upon the Spaniards, on the defenceless coast of their American dominions, in which my other passions were urged to haste, by fear of my creditors, the news of my failing having come to Jamaica almost as soon as myself.

We therefore set out upon our cruise, or rather piracy, without delay, of which I shall not raise your horror with any further particulars, than that we went directly into the Spanish main, where we not only rifled all the ships we met, but also made descents on the coasts, and ravaged with a barbarity that was a reproach to human nature.

The tumult and hurry of this life kept my spirits in an agitation that gave a kind of respite to my grief; and the spoil we made in our first enterprises was so great, as to awake hopes of restoring my affairs, so as to enable me to return to England with all the credit wealth could give. And could I have known when to stop, I was soon rich even beyond my most sanguine hopes; but urged by avarice, and encouraged by success, I still went on head-long to my fate, which I met in an attempt upon a town some way up in the country, the convenience and pleasantness of whose situation had made it the residence of the richest families in the whole province: as its distance from the coast made them live in a state of perfect security, without any fortification or guard.

Drawn by E.F. Burney. W. Read. Sc.

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

The distressed situation of Amelia

To this place we directed our march, one evening, and arrived at it a little after midnight, with an intention to surprise the inhabitants, and return to our ship with the spoil, before the country could rise to intercept us.

The first part of our design succeeded, and we got possession of the town without any resistance; where we committed all the outrages, and roamed about with the licentious carelessness, of free-booters under no command.

While every one thus prowled about for prey, fate goaded me to an arbour in a garden, whither I followed the cries of women! I was just rushing in among them, inflamed with brutal desire, when—what was my astonishment to see Amelia, in the most magnificent undress, throwing heaps of gold and jewels into a vault that opened by a trap-door into the arbour! I stood motionless at the sight for some moments, in distrust of my senses, but two such objects as she and her riches, soon awoke me from my trance, and I advanced to take possession of both, resolving not to discover myself till a more proper time; the strangeness of my dress, that was designed to strike horror, and the blood which, from scenes of cruelty and murder just committed, still reeked upon my hands and face, making it impossible that she should know me.

At the sight of me, the women all shrieked, and Amelia, as I advanced to lay hold on her, fell into a swoon. This embarrassed me greatly, as I had no time to lose; for our centinels just then sounded a retreat. However, I determined to wait a little, to see if she recovered, and stooping to raise her, to give her air, I received such a blow from behind, as de-

prived me of all sense for several hours; when, on my recovering, I found myself chained on the ground in a dungeon.

I was some time before I could believe my senses, or conceive where I was; till the jailor coming to see if I was alive, gave me to understand, that my companions had gone off without me, and left me in the hands of a nobleman, who had himself knocked me down, as I was going to commit a rape upon his lady, while she lay in a swoon; and that I had been thrown into this dungeon, that if I recovered, I might suffer the punishment due to the outrages we had committed both here, and in several other places of their dominions.

I wanted no farther information to shew me the horrors of my situation. I saw them all, and aggravated an hundred fold, by the accusation of my own conscience, that could now trace the hand of heaven in the justice of my punishment, which had thus overtaken me, in the presence, and on the account, of Amelia. I wished for death, as my only relief, and determined to seek it: but, alas! my resolution failed me; and I feared to die. In this misery I was dragged before a magistrate, who enumerating the crimes we had been guilty of, condemned me to immediate death.

This sentence, so much milder than my fears, awoke an hope of further mercy, to obtain which, my evil genius suggested it to me, to apply to Amelia; absurdly flattering myself, that some sparks of her love for me might yet remain alive, or at least, her goodness take delight in shewing itself superior to my ill-treatment. Base hope, that met its just reward!

ADVENTURES OF A [illegible]
Traffic visited in his Dungeon by
the Spider [illegible]

I therefore waved attempting a defence of other crimes, as I was conscious that I could not make any, but asserted my innocence, as to the particular charge of a base design upon Amelia, at the time I was taken, adding, that 'I had the honour of being 'nearly related to that lady, and that, if I was in-'dulged with a few words with her, in the presence 'of all there, I hoped I might be found to merit a 'mitigation of my sentence.

On my mentioning the name of Amelia, I observed one of the principal persons in the court, whom I soon understood to be her husband, kindle into rage. He did not however interrupt me; but as soon as I had concluded, he started up, and exclaimed with the most furious indignation: 'Amelia, thy relation! 'No more than angels are related to devils, by 'springing from the same Creator! Her virtues are 'dishonoured by the claim! But she shall appear 'and disprove the odious calumny.'—Saying which words, he instantly went for her, while an hollow murmur of surprise and detestation made the silence of the court the more dreadful, and heightened the horrors of my suspense.

But I waited not long: Amelia soon appeared, led in by her husband, and being seated by the judge, 'Where,' said she, looking round with the serenity of conscious virtue, 'Where is the person who says 'he is related to me?'

The sight of her threw me into such a conflict of passions, that without reflecting where I was, or how necessary it might be for me to raise her compassion by some moving address that might soften the severity of her resentment for my former treatment of her,

as well as assure her of my innocence of any base designs against her person, in the condition she was in when I was taken; I could not forbear crying out in English, for I had spoken before in Spanish, in which I expressed myself but badly 'O Amelia! hast thou then forgot me?'

At the sound of my voice, she started, and looking earnestly at me for a moment, fell upon her knees, and lifting her hands and eyes to heaven, she said aloud in Spanish, 'O God, how signal is this justice! 'Let me, let all the world acknowledge and adore 'it!'—And then rising and turning to her husband, who stood in amazement: 'This, my lord,' said she, 'this is the man of whom I have informed you: This 'is that Traffic whose base dishonesty obliged me to 'leave my native country; and so, by that provi- 'dence which is able to turn the greatest misfortune 'into a blessing, was made the cause of my present 'happiness with you. I abjure all kindred with 'him; I desire he may be examined as to my story; 'and if he can vary in the least from what I have 'told you, let me be condemned to the severest pu- 'nishment but that of staying longer in his sight, or 'ever seeing his face more.'

On this she withdrew, without deigning a look at me: but her words had a proper effect upon my heart, and I resolved to do her justice. I therefore prevented her husband's command, and in as few words as possible, related the black affair with the strictest truth. When I had concluded, her lord declared, that I had not only confirmed every thing she had told him, but also added many circumstances of my own guilt, which she had omitted, or perhaps not known.

So complicated guilt seemed to require consideration to find out proper punishment, so I was remanded to my dungeon, but without the least encouragement to hope. The next day I was again brought into the court, where my former sentence was changed into that of being broke alive upon the wheel; and this severity was said to be in justice to Amelia.

When I had stood some moments stupified with fear, the judge addressed me again in these words: 'Thou hast heard, O wretched man, the sentence due 'to thy crimes; but great as they have been, mercy 'extends her hand to thee. The virtues of the illus-'trious Donna Amelia over-balance thy guilt, and 'have prevailed for a mitigation of thy punishment, 'in gratitude to that divine providence which made 'thee the cause of her coming among us. Thou 'shalt not die, because we would not kill thy soul, 'before thou hast had time to repent of thy crimes; 'nor shalt thou suffer torture, that thy strength may 'not be impaired for the labour to which thy life is 'doomed; for this is the last day thou shalt ever be-'hold the light of Heaven: Thou shalt immediately 'descend into the mines, there to work out the residue 'of thine unhappy days, in raising that gold for the 'use of others, the insatiable desire of which was the 'cause of all thy guilt.'

I would have spoken, in the agony of my soul, to desire death! but I was stopped by the judge, who sternly said, that to hear a word from me would be an insult upon justice. On his saying which, I was hurried away to the mountains over us, and precipitated into this gulph, where I have now been near——

Just as he said this, I was obliged to fly away to my body, which the unhappy Traffic had thrown from

his hand, into the vessel in which it was to be raised from the mine.

The length of this story will make you wonder, when I tell you, that the spirit of Traffic *shewed* it to me in a moment, for no longer did the gold remain in his possession, and I am always obliged to attend my body whenever it changes its master. But to understand this, you must be informed, that *we spirits do not distinguish our existence by time or a succession of parts, as men do; with us there is nothing past or to come, but every thing is present in one view*, so far as the natural course of causes and effects is preserved free from interruption by superior power.

CHAPTER VII.

Chrysal pursues the history of his adventures. He explains some difficulties in his own nature. He is offered at a confession to a priest. The confession and creed of a native Peruvian. The penance enjoined him by a Jesuit.

THERE is no crime, however black in its own nature, that does not receive an aggravation from hypocrisy; but the highest exertion of this vice is, when it makes a pretext of the best institutions, to promote the practice of the worst actions. Of this I have seen innumerable instances, in the adventures of my present state; though none so flagrant as what I shall now relate.

You may imagine I felt pleasure at emerging from that infernal abyss into light. There was nothing remarkable in the three or four first stages I went through, my temporary owners being only the refiners and other tradesmen, who purified me from mixtures of mineral drofs.

I see you are desirous to know how I could preserve my *identity*, when melted down with large quantities of the same metal. But you must know, that *spirits have a power of expanding or contracting themselves into what dimensions they please; and that their life is not confined to any particular parts, as the heart or head, as in man, but is diffused through their whole bodies, so that any part being separated from the rest does not die;** but that portion of spirit which was in it, at the time of such separation, serves as a life for it; and becomes a distinct spirit, to inform that distinct body, and so on, ad infinitum;†* for as it is agreed upon, that bodies can be infinitely divided, upon the same principles, spirit must also; for it would be most absurd and impious to deny of the superior, any perfection which we attribute to the inferior. The enlarging of my body, therefore, by the addition of more matter, or the lessening of it by ever so many divisions, makes no alteration in my *sameness*, so long as my consciousness remains:‡ *the former only increasing by energy, by the accession of so much spirit as informed the additional matter;§ for we spirits embody ourselves entirely in commixion, and resolve into one;||* as the latter separates us again into distinct beings, to animate our separate bodies.

The first absolute owner to whom I belonged, was

* Milton. † Essay on Spirit. ‡ Locke.
§ Essay on Spirit. || Milton.

a native Peruvian, who had found means to purloin a considerable quantity of gold, part of which I was, and who presented me, as a peace-offering to an ecclesiastic at confession.

I *see* you have a curiosity to know my sentiments on religious matters; but I have told you before, that I am not allowed to make revelations. Sufficient on this head have been already made to man, did not his perverseness distort them from their original perspicuity and perfection.

As there was something in the transactions which passed, when I was offered to this ecclesiastic, that may be new to you, I shall repeat some particulars of them.

You must have heard of the authority of the clergy, in all the countries which profess the religion of the *Roman pontiff*, and particularly those under the Spanish monarchy. Of all the several orders which compose this political *hierarchy*, those who call themselves THE COMPANIONS OF THEIR GOD,* have acquired the greatest power.

Though this title may appear profanely great to you, yet they seem to support it by the share which they assume in some of his most sacred prerogatives.

To a reverend father, of this order, was I presented, on the festival called Easter. He was seated in a retired chamber of his temple, in the exercise of one of the functions of the Deity, *hearing, and punishing, or forgiving sins*, according to his sovereign

* The Jesuits call themselves *Socii Jesu*, the Companions of Jesus.

pleasure. It is not possible to give you *here* an idea of the solemnity of this ceremony, in a country where all religion is evaporated into shew. Be it sufficient to say, that the pageantry was such a mockery of the Deity, as no other of his creatures but *man*, would dare to commit. The man who brought me into this mysterious fane, advanced with fear and trembling to the *apparent Deity* of the place, and, kneeling before him, confessed himself guilty of several *heinous crimes*, in the *admission* of *involuntary thoughts* and *indulgence* of the *appetites of nature*, contrary to the rules laid down for him by his spiritual guide.—But this will be best explained by instances. The first crime which the penitent revealed, was having tasted a morsel of flesh on a day when it was prohibited. The father, with a severe frown, told him, 'That was a great sin, which he 'must atone for, by working two days for the church, 'without hire, and abstaining from flesh, at the same 'time, though it was generally allowed.'

He next confessed, that he had beaten a dog belonging to a priest, which had broke into his hut, and eaten the pottage prepared for him, by which means he had been obliged to go to sleep without his supper. At this, the priest knitting his brow into tenfold austerity, exclaimed, 'This is rebellion! rebel-'lion against your God! Do you not know, that 'the dog of an ecclesiastic is above the greatest '(even white) layman, much more a wicked native! 'You must make amends — you must!—or'— The tone and gesture with which he spoke these words, so terrified the trembling wretch, that he instantly put his hand into his bosom, and pulling *me* out, presented me to make his peace. As soon as *I* appeared, the priest's features softened, the tone of his voice fell, and receiving me, with a gracious smile,

'You have not said,' says he, 'that the master of 'the dog was a jesuit! the crime, therefore, though 'great, may be forgiven; but beware for the future, 'and remember, that the world, and all in it, belongs 'to us; and that to be guilty of the least disobe- 'dience, even in thought, is treason, and deserves 'the severest punishment. Proceed: unburthen 'your conscience? I know your thoughts, but 'would have you speak them, that I may prove your 'sincerity. Proceed, I am in haste!'

The penitent then went on—'O father, be merci- 'ful, and I will confess all! Returning from my 'labour one evening late, I found my door fastened, 'and, no one answering when I called, I burst it in, 'when behold, I saw father Ignatius in the very act 'of carnality with my beloved wife Mootaw! I was 'amazed! and though fear prevented my striking 'him, I could not forbear thinking in my heart, that 'he who does those things, can be no *god*, he must 'be only *man;* and I cursed him in the bitterness of 'my soul; but he was drunk with wine, and did not 'hear me.'

'Wretch! devil! heretic!' exclaimed the father in a rage, 'thou intrude upon the privacy of a *Jesuit!* 'thou say he was but a *man?* thou *think* he could 'not know thy very thoughts, because he had drank 'wine! Audacious slave! Art not thou and thy 'wife his? Had he not a right to use his own? 'Was it not an honour to thee, ungrateful wretch? 'and darest thou to *think a Jesuit is but a man?* 'But it is enough, the inquisition shall teach thee 'faith and obedience; the inquisition—'

At that tremendous word, the wretch, half dead with fear, fell at his feet, crying out—'O father, O

'God, O king, forgive, forgive!' and pulling out of his bosom the rest of his gold, 'Take this, O lord, 'from your poor slave, and forgive. Take this, 'which I got at the peril of my life, and saved to 'buy the liberty of my dear child, whom my master 'took from me: take it, and forgive; let her still be 'a slave: let me never see her more! But, oh! the 'inquisition! O forgive! forgive!'

The priest, mollified at the sight of the gold, replied, 'thou knowest my compassion, but thou abusest it, 'and thy crimes are almost too great for mercy. If 'hope thou wilt amend, and transgress so no more, I 'will forgive thee now: but thou must be punished: 'Hast thou no more gold?'—'O, father, no more, 'no more! and this I saved to redeem my dear 'child: O let me get my child!'—'What! insolent! 'dost thou presume to capitulate? Thou shalt be pu- 'nished. Instead of getting back thy daughter, thou 'shalt bring me thy son, whom I saw yesterday, 'when I bade thee come to confession. The boy I 'blessed, and kissed upon thy knee.'—'O father, fa- 'ther, take all the gold, and let my daughter remain, 'but spare my son; he is too young, O father, too 'young for *thee*.'—'The inquisition!'—'O take him, 'father, take him, take all, but spare me. I fly to 'bring my child to thee; O spare me from the inqui- 'sition!'—'Tis well, be comforted; thy sins shall 'be forgiven; perhaps, if thou behavest well, thy son 'may also be restored. I fear thou hast forgotten 'thy Christian faith; let me hear thee repeat thy 'creed.'—The man, somewhat reassured, to hear that he should escape the inquisition, and comforted with the hope of having his son restored, began thus: —'I believe that God made the world, and all things 'in it, for my lords the JESUITS; and that I must 'worship him by obeying them, and saying the

'prayers they direct me to the saints, and the blessed 'Virgin, the mother of God, and above all, to the 'great saint *Ignatius Loyola*. But if I disobey their 'commands in any thing, or repine at their service, 'or think that I must obey the viceroy before them, 'I shall be burned to death in the inquisition here, 'and the great devil will burn me for ever, after I am 'dead.'

'Well, son, remember, and practise thy creed, and 'thy sins shall be forgiven thee. Go, and bring the 'boy when it is dark.'

CHAPTER VIII.

The holy father's tenderness to another penitent, who had ravished, murdered, and robbed his own brother's wife. He accepts the spoils as a recompence to the church. He hints a method of preventing the danger of his brother's resentment, and dismisses him with ghostly advice.

THE severity with which the jesuit required satisfaction for the imaginary faults of the poor Peruvian, may, perhaps, lead you to think, that his zeal would be inexorable to real crimes; but the following account will shew you, that it was no such thing, and that he looked upon nothing as a crime, which was not detrimental to the power, or temporal interest, of his society.—The next penitent who approached the *mercy-seat*, was a commander in the army. He ad-

vanced with a military intrepidity, and kneeling down in form, 'Father,' said he, 'I have a long reckoning 'to make, and some of the articles are rather heavy.' 'My son,' replied the priest, 'you have had expe- 'rience of the indulgence of the church, and that no 'crimes are too black for her mercy, on *proper* peni- 'tence. Proceed then, and open your ailments to 'your physician, nor fear the efficacy of his medi- 'cines.'

You know then, father,' said the penitent, 'that 'I have long burned with a passion for the wife of 'my brother the judge. It was the subject of my 'last confession.'—'I remember it right well,' re- plied the father, 'and you may remember also what 'ghostly, yet comfortable, advice I gave you, to strive 'against, and suppress it, if you could.'—'True, fa- 'ther; but I told you then, that I knew it would be 'in vain for me to strive, as I was resolved to enjoy 'her, though at the hazard of life.'—'But, son, did 'I not comfort you, by saying, that if you found it in 'vain to strive, and could not live without her, as 'life was the greatest good in this world, it was just 'that you should preserve your's by obtaining what 'you was so violently set upon, but always be care- 'ful that you conduct matters so as not to give 'offence by your success.'—'Ah! but father, that 'was not in my power: she was deaf to all my in- 'treaties; and that threw me into such despair, that 'not able to wait any longer, I have this very morn- 'ing had recourse to force.'—'That was really bad, 'if it could have been avoided; but as you would 'not have forced her if she would have complied wil- 'lingly, that alters the case very much in your favour, 'and perhaps she put you to that trouble only to save 'the appearance of her own virtue, and if so, you

'have both acted right, and there is no harm done, 'provided the affair is not disclosed.'

'O, father, that is the thing. I was afraid of that; 'and as her husband had always been a father to me, 'and all my future hopes depended on him, I so 'greatly dreaded her telling him, that, to prevent it, 'as soon as I had enjoyed her, I cut her throat.'

'Murder, O fie; it is an heinous crime: blood calls 'for blood: your case is terrible.'—'I feared so, fa- 'ther: but I depended on your tenderness; and I did 'not think it reasonable that I should have all the 'pleasure of the crime, and you only the trouble of 'forgiving. I stripped her *of these* jewels, which give 'me leave to offer *you*.'

'You are a prudent man, my son; I thought you 'would act with discretion. I accept the jewels, as a 'peace offering to the *holy church*, for your sins; and 'as the value of them (indeed they are costly gems) 'proves the sincerity of your repentance, I shall not 'hesitate to pronounce your sins forgiven.

'*For though adultery is a great sin, and in this 'case aggravated by rape and incest, yet, as you say, 'it was not because she was the wife of another man, 'and especially your brother, that you desired to en- 'joy her, but merely as she was a beautiful woman, 'therefore the adultery and incest comes in but by '*accident*; and then, as you ravished her only be- 'cause she would not comply, the sin of the rape is 'certainly her's, as I said before; for if I force a 'man to commit a crime, I am guilty of that crime, 'and not he: and again, though murder is a most

* See the casuistical Divinity of the Jesuits, throughout.

'heinous sin, yet as you killed her not merely to in-
'dulge a murderous intent, but to prevent her disco-
'vering your having forced her, and so ruining you,
'the intention quite alters the nature of the fact, and
'makes it but self-preservation, which is the first law
'of nature. And, lastly, as you took the jewels, not
'with a design to rob her, but to offer them to the
'*church*, and accordingly have brought them, that
'conclusion sanctifies the whole action, and makes
'your peace with heaven.

'For know, my son, that crimes which respect
'*men only* as in your case, rape, adultery, incest,
'murder, and robbery, though bad in themselves, 'tis
'true, yet are a pleasure to the church to forgive, to
'a faithful and penitent son, *who believes all her doc-*
'trines, and pays due obedience to her clergy, the
'vicegerents of God on earth, the receivers of her re-
'venues, and dispensers of her favours and vengeance;
'to whom all earthly power is subservient, who are
'the kings of kings, and lords of the world.—This,
'my son, is the doctrine of our holy church, as deli-
'vered by the most learned fathers of our order, in
'the belief of which you will be safe from all the
'powers of hell: do what you will, while you pay
'faith and obedience to the church, she will pardon
'all your sins.'—

When he had concluded his instructions, with this pious exhortation, and sealed his absolution with a blessing, the purified saint arose, and said, 'Holy 'father, thou hast set my soul at ease, with regard to '*hereafter*, but still I fear for this world. It unfor-'tunately happened, that I was seen in the fact by a 'servant who escaped me, or I should have charmed 'her silence too; and now I apprehend she will in-'form my brother.'—'This is unlucky, most un-

captain all aghast, 'O father! father!' said he, as soon as he could speak, 'sanctuary! sanctuary! my 'brother is at the gate, with all the officers of jus-'tice!'—At this the father grinned an insulting smile, and beckoning to the other priest to withdraw, 'Wretch,' said he, 'thou *sacrilegious* wretch! how 'could'st thou dare to enter these holy walls, violated 'by thy guilt? Didst thou not fear the fate of Ana-'nias and Sapphira? As thou didst deceive me with 'thy feigned penitence, and hast lied to the Lord, in 'concealing what thou hadst most justly devoted to 'him; I revoke the absolution I gave thee, and will 'deliver thee to justice, to receive the punishment 'due to thy crimes: these holy walls afford no sanc-'tuary to *sacrilege!*'

'The poor criminal stood confounded at reproaches, which he dared not interrupt, though he could not comprehend the cause or meaning of them. At length, when the priest had exclaimed himself out of breath, the trembling wretch replied, 'O father! what can 'have kindled thy wrath against me? I have com-'mitted no crime since thy absolution purged my soul! I was only going toward my brother's house, 'when I met him, and the servant with him, with all 'the officers of justice, in search of me, on which I 'fled directly to you for sanctuary.' 'I grant no 'sanctuary to sacrilege.'—'What sacrilege, O father?' ——'The crucifix, deceitful wretch! where is thy 'sister's crucifix? Hast thou not defrauded the 'church of her due? Didst thou not say, that thou 'tookest thy sister's jewels only to make a peace-'offering for thy sins, and then to secret thus the 'most valuable part of them! *This is defrauding the 'labourer of his hire!* This is defrauding the church 'of her right, without making the proper compen-'sations! and what can be greater sacrilege?'

Just at these words, a knocking at the gate awoke the *penitent* from his amaze, and made him apprehend that he had not a minute to lose; he therefore, with the readiest presence of mind, replied,—'The 'crucifix! father! you astonish me! did I not give 'it you?' And then putting his hand into his bosom, and pulling it out, with a look of surprise, he reached it to him. 'Forgive, O father,' said he, 'the crime 'of inadvertency! I meant not to have kept it from 'you, but only overlooked it, in my confusion. Ac- 'cept it; accept all I am master of, and save my 'life.'

'Son', replied the father, softening his voice, and taking the crucifix, 'I am glad thou wast not *inten-* '*tionally* guilty of so unpardonable an offence! I 'believe, and accept thy excuse. Be comforted, 'therefore, my son, thy sins are forgiven.' 'O but, 'father, the officers of justice.'—'What officers, 'what justice, dares attempt to shew her face within 'these walls? Thou art *my* penitent, I have absolved 'thee, and I will defend thee. Sit down and com- 'pose thy spirits, while I repel this bold intrusion on 'the peace and privilege of these holy walls.'

Saying thus, the father went to the gate of the convent, where stood the judge, displaying the guilt of the fugitive to the holy fathers, to engage them to refuse him sanctuary, and give him up to justice. But my master soon stopped him. 'Cease,' said he with a low voice, and downcast meditative look, 'disturb not the peace of these holy walls. The man 'you seek is *my* penitent. He has made satisfaction 'to the church, and reconciled himself to Heaven. 'I come this moment from giving him the seal of 'absolution. Disturb not the raptures of his soul, 'that is now joining with the angelic choirs, in the'

'hymns of joy raised in heaven for his repentance. 'Depart in peace.'

'How, father,' exclaimed the judge, 'can a 'wretch, guilty of such crimes, so soon have made 'his peace! He has deceived you, father; he has 'not told you half his guilt: rape, incest, adultery, 'and murder! Can *they* be thus forgiven? So easy 'pardons but encourage vice.' 'And who art thou, 'presumptuous man!' replied the father, raising his voice, and putting on an air of authority, 'and who 'art thou, that darest thus to call the power of God's 'holy church in question? What faith, or rather 'what *heresy* has taught thee this presumption? 'Dost thou measure the divine authority of our un-'erring tribunal by the weak rules of thy blind law? 'Are not the keys of heaven our's; and have we not 'the power to loose as well as bind? but I shall not 'argue more with thee *here;* there is a tribunal proper 'for such *opinions* as thine; there try if thy know-'ledge of the laws will justify thy heresies; there 'thou art not judge.'

The first mention of heresy had struck such a terror into the heart of the poor judge, that he was for some moments unable to reply. At last, recollecting himself a little, 'I submit, O father,' said he, 'I am 'no heretic; I have no *opinions* but what I learn 'from the holy church, whose power I acknowledge 'in all its divine plenitude.'—'Tis well,' replied the priest, 'tis well, depart in peace, and to-morrow I 'will visit thee, and examine the state of thy con-'science.'

The judge then making a profound reverence, withdrew without a murmur, and the triumphant father returned to his penitent. 'My son,' said he, 'thine

'enemies are defeated. Thy rest is secure *here*. 'But such is their power, and so strong the general 'abhorrence that pursues thy *late* guilt, that it will 'not be safe for thee ever to leave this sanctuary.' 'O father, must I be confined for ever here?'—'I said 'not so, my son: there is a way for thee to go in 'triumph out, above the power of thy present perse-'cutors.'—'O name it, father.'—'Take our vows, 'heaven has blessed thee with a fertile genius, and 'steeled thy soul with fortitude. These talents must 'not be buried; an account will be required of them; 'and where can they be put to proper use, except in 'the service of the Donor, in his church? there they 'will raise thee to that rank and power, which thou 'seest us enjoy. I see thou yieldest. Resist not 'the motions of the holy spirit. I receive thee into 'the fold. I salute thee brother. From this mo-'ment of thine election mayst thou date thy entrance 'into the highest honours of this world. The day 'approaches when thy military knowledge and valour 'may also be called into action. Great events are 'ripening in the womb of time!'—'I yield, O father,' replied the penitent, 'I receive thine offer with due 'submission and respect; and from this moment 'dedicate my valour, skill, and every power of my 'soul and body to the implicit service of thine holy 'order.'—'It is the hand of Heaven that leads thee, 'no longer son, but brother. I will go and acquaint 'our brethren with thy *miraculous* conversion and 'election. Thou hast no more to do but to make thy 'will, and bequeath all thy wealth to our order.'—

'*Bequeath*, my father, must I die?' 'But to the 'world, brother, to live with us.'—'But I have no-'thing to bequeath.'—'Leave that to us. Do you 'only give all your fortune, in the hands of your bro-'ther, to our society, in consequence of your admis-

'sion, and let us find that fortune. I go. The bell 'rings for *vespers*. I shall send our notary to you; 'and when that is done, we will restore our exhausted 'spirits with a slight repast in the refectory, where 'I will introduce thee to our brethren.'

In a word, all things were executed, and the new brother admitted in proper time into the order, of which he has since risen to be one of the brightest ornaments. And the judge, to avoid the imputation of heresy, which his *implied* doubt of the church's sanctuary had given my master the hint of, was glad to pay half his wealth to the society, as the fortune of his pious brother.

Soon as this affair was thus happily completed, my master, that he might openly shew his adoration of me to the world, had me made into a crucifix, in which shape I was fastened to his *rosary*, and there publicly received that adoration from the knee, which before was paid me only in the heart.—A repetition of all the occurrences I saw in the service of this master would be unnecessary, as the two I have related give a general idea of them.

CHAPTER X.

Chrysal changes his service, and embarks for Europe in an English man of war. The cause and manner of his coming that way. The occurrences of his passage. On his arrival in England he is sent by his master to settle some mistakes in the voyage.

I WAS heartily sick of such a scene, when the time came for sending me into these parts of the world, where scarcity enhances my value, and makes my power more extensive. There being a war between Spain and England at that time, *about the liberty of cutting sticks upon a desert shore*, it was necessary to secure a safe passage for the treasure, by establishing a right understanding with the commander of an English man of war, which was cruizing in those seas. It fell to my lot to go on this errand, in the shape of a doubloon, into which I was cast, to save the profanation which a crucifix must suffer in the hands of heretics.

There was some little address requisite to conduct this affair with the captain, in such a manner as to keep it secret from his officers, to gain all of whom would have been too expensive; besides that he would never trust his *sacred* honour to the fidelity of so many. But this was readily adjusted. The refinements of modern politeness having softened the natural ferocity of a state of war, and admitting an intercourse of courtesy between parties who profess

to seek each other's destruction, the Spanish governor sent out a boat with his compliments to the English captain, with a large supply of fresh provisions, fruits, wine, &c.

This necessarily produced a return of civility from the well-bred captain; and in this intercourse were the terms of his connivance settled, as the seal of which I was delivered to him among a very large number of my fellows, who honourably punctual to his promise, at the appointed time, sailed away from that station *in quest of some ships of the enemy's which he expected to meet elsewhere*, and did not return till the Spanish treasure was beyond his reach.

As this was a compliment of great consequence to the Spaniards, the captain had been so handsomely considered for it, that his desires were satisfied, and he only wished to be safe at home, to enjoy the wealth he had so happily acquired. Often would he take me out, (for the beauty of my new impression had struck his eye, and gained me the honour of being kept in his purse) often, I say, would he take me out of his purse, and, gazing on me till his eyes watered, 'O thou end of all my toils and dangers!' would he say, 'thou crown of all my hopes! now I have ob-'tained thee I am content! Let others seek that 'phantom, glory, I have in thee the more solid re-'ward, for which I always sought, nor shall any 'thing tempt me to hazard being separated from thee.' A resolution which he had an opportunity of shewing in all its strength a few days after, when a ship appeared, which he thought to be a Spanish man of war.

As ours was a ship of force, and all the officers (except the captain) were very poor; and as the

Spanish ships are always richly laden with treasure in those seas, the crew was in the highest spirits at this sight, and made every thing ready to attack her, with the most eager alacrity. But the case was quite different with the captain. He was now as rich as he desired, and dreaded the loss of that wealth which he had so long laboured for. He, therefore, retired into his cabin, while the lieutenants were *clearing ship*, and taking *me* out of his purse, with a look of tenderness that brought the tears into his eyes, 'And 'shall I hazard the loss of thee,' he cried, 'the ob-'ject, the reward of a life of toil and danger? Shall 'I sacrifice the only good of life to that chimera, ho-'nour? to that bubble lighter than air, and more 'variable than the wind, the interest of my country? 'What is honour without wealth?—What is a 'country to him who has nothing in it?—Let the 'poor fight for money, I have enough! Let the ambi-'tious fight for glory, I despise the empty name. 'Let those who have a property in their country fight 'for it, I have none, nor can have, nor any of its 'blessings without thee; and, therefore, will not 'venture thy loss for any such vain considerations.'

As soon as he had formed this prudent resolution, he clasped me to his heart, kissed me, and returned me into his purse, just as the lieutenant came in to tell him, they could now *make* the ship, which must be vastly rich, she was so deep in the water. My master made no reply, but taking a telescope in his hand, he went upon the quarter deck, and viewing her for some time, with great apparent earnestness, 'You are all mistaken,' said he, 'in that ship: rich 'indeed! and so she may remain for us. That ship 'is a first-rate man of war by her size: and as for 'her depth in the water, she is only brought down by 'her guns, which are fifty-two pounders at least.

'*Put about* the ship, and make all sail possible from
'her. I am answerable for his majesty's ship com-
'mitted to my care, and will not sacrifice her against
'such odds. Her weight of metal would blow us
'out of the water. Besides, I have a packet on
'board, and must not go out of my way: *about ship*,
'and away directly, I say.'

The officers stood aghast at this speech, that disappointed all their golden hopes. They urged, they beseeched, they remonstrated, that it was impossible she could be what he said: they insisted that the colour of her sails, and the heaviness of her going, proved her to be a ship of trade that had been long at sea; and as for her bulk, it only encouraged them to hope she would prove the better prize, as all the ships that carry the treasure are very large; that they had observed they *wronged* her so much, they could go round her if they pleased; and begged only that they might be permitted to take a nearer view of her, which they were confident would prove her to be what they said. They alleged the opportunity of making all their fortunes; the honour, the interest of their country. They begged, swore, stormed, and wept; but all in vain. The captain had taken his resolution; and would vouchsafe no other answer than a repetition of what he had said before, 'That
'he was accountable for his majesty's ship, and
'would not hazard her to gratify them: besides, the
'packet he had on board, might be of worse conse-
'quence than the taking of such a ship (should she
'even be what they said, though he was certain to
'the contrary) would make amends for. And that,
'as to going nearer to her, the length of her guns
'would enable them to drive every shot through and
'through his ship, at a distance that his could never
'reach her from; though if they should be mad

'enough to engage her, his *small* shot could never 'pierce such mountains of timber as her sides were 'barricaded with.' And so, as his power was absolute, they were obliged to submit, and *off he sheered*.

It is impossible to describe the distraction which this affair threw our ship into. The officers acted all the inconsistent outrages of madness. The men chewed the *cud*, damned their eyes and limbs for their bad luck, and went to work as usual; while several poor sick wretches, whose spirits had been so raised by the hopes of such a prize, that they had forgot their complaints, and exerted all their strength to assist in the engagement, now sunk under the weight of the disappointment, and crawled back, many of them to die in their hammocks.

But the captain had carried his point, and regarded nothing else; though indeed he was somewhat disconcerted a few days after, when he learned from another ship, that she really was a *register* ship of immense value, and so weakened by hard weather and sickness, that she could not have attempted any resistance, but had prepared to strike the moment she saw us. This information added such fuel to the rage that inflamed the officers before, that all intercourse between them and their captain was entirely broke off, so that I became his sole companion.

This lasted all the while we were at a distance from England; but as we drew near home, the captain's stiffness began to bend, and he made several advances to a reconciliation and general amnesty, as he could not but feel some apprehensions for his conduct from his superiors. But all was in vain. The thought of returning in poverty, instead of that wealth which he had disappointed them of, kept up their

resentments, and they determined to complain, 1. only for the satisfaction of revenge.

This convinced my master, that methods must be taken to obviate their attempts, or he might run a greater hazard at home than he had intended to avoid abroad. He therefore prudently concluded, that the same argument which had been so powerful with himself, would be the most effectual to vindicate what he had done with others, and that it would be better to share the spoil, than risk the loss of all.

For this intent, as soon as he arrived in England, he took *me* from his purse once more, and looking earnestly at me for some moments, 'We must part,' said he, with a sigh, 'we must part! but I hope to 'good purpose. Thou only wast the cause of that 'conduct which now gives me fear; exert therefore 'thy influence equally, where I now send thee, and 'thou wilt excuse my fault, if it is one.' Tears, at the thought of losing me, here choked his utterance; he gave me a last kiss, and sent me directly away, in company with a considerable number more, to mediate his peace.

CHAPTER XI.

The good consequences of a right understanding between certain persons. Chrysal's reflections on his first seeing the public offices in London. His master visits a gentleman, who in the vehemence of his rage against certain abuses, hits himself a violent slap on the face. The necessity of decency, and the methods of supporting it, instanced in the history of a pretty fellow.

AS the delicate nature of this transaction required some address, he entrusted the management of it to his purser, who had convinced him by many instances, of his sagacity in the methods of obtaining an influence over the great.

As soon as my new master arrived in London, his first care was to execute the commission for which *we* had been given to him; but the person to whom this application was to be made, happening to be out of town for a few days, that he might not lose any time, he proceeded to settle some affairs of his own; in the course of which, I had an opportunity of seeing into some part of the secrets of his mysterious business.

The professed motive for his coming to town, was to settle his own, and pass his captain's, accounts, between which there was a connection not necessary

to be known to any other: for though my late master did not think it consistent with his dignity to be too familiar with his officers, and generally slighted their opinion, if only to shew his own superiority and keep them at a proper distance, with him and his purser the case is quite otherwise, the best understanding always subsisting between them, and every affair being concerted with the greatest harmony to their mutual advantage: an agreement, which, beside the comfort and convenience of it to themselves, had this happy influence over the rest of the ship's company, that it kept them, if not easy, at least quiet, from all murmurings, and complaints of bad provisions, short weights, and such like *imaginary* grievances, which, the restless temper of seamen is too apt to make the cause of much trouble to the purser, and disturbance to the captain, when these happen not to agree between themselves. But, as the contrary was the case here, their common interest animated the assiduity of my master, and made him go directly to the several officers and contractors, with whom his business lay, to prepare every thing in proper order for public inspection.

On my first going to these public offices, every thing gave me pleasure. There was such an appearance of regularity in all the proceedings, of ease and affluence in the officers, that I could not help saying to myself, 'Happy state, whose meanest servants 'are gentlemen! whose business is reduced to a 'system, above danger of confusion or abuse!' But a nearer view shewed things in another light. The first person my master went to, was the gentleman who supplied him with those kind of cloathing for the seamen, which are by these merry poor fellows emphatically called *slops*. As he was just going to dinner, my master accepted of his invitation, and sat

down with him. A round or two of loyal toasts to the success of the navy, and continuance of the war, having washed down their fare, and refreshed their spirits after the fatigue of a full meal, they proceeded to business.—'I come, Sir, (said my master) to settle 'the account of the last cruise. Here it is: you see 'most of the articles have gone off pretty well: but 'I must tell you, that you are more obliged to some 'of your friends for that, than you are aware of per- 'haps; for if I had not prevailed on the captain, to 'let the alehouse-keepers and gin-women come on 'board, and keep the slop-sellers off, when the men 'received their pay, on going out, you would have 'had but a blank list of it. But, by this manage- 'ment, the fellows spent all their money in drink, and 'then necessity drove them to me for cloaths.'

'Here is to the captain's good health,' answered the other, 'and that I may soon see him at the head 'of the navy: I am very much obliged to you and 'him, and shall consider your friendship properly. 'But is there no way of preventing those pedlars 'from intruding thus upon us? I am resolved I will 'try: I believe I can make an interest, (you under- 'stand me) that will procure me an order to exclude 'them: at least if I cannot do that, I will insist on 'raising my terms; for every branch of business is 'now so loaded with presents and perquisites, that 'there is scarce any thing to be got. A man who 'goes to a public office, to receive money, runs the 'gauntlet through so many of them, that, if he does 'not make up his accounts in a very masterly manner 'indeed, he will have but little to shew, for his pains, 'in the end.'—'Very true,' replied my master, 'I 'have had experience of what you say, this very 'morning. You know it is some years since I have 'been in town before: I was therefore quite surprised

'at the gay appearance of every clerk in the offices. '—Our midshipmen on the paying off of a ship, are 'nothing to them! so, thought I to myself: this is 'very well! Such fine gentlemen as these will never 'stoop to take the little perquisites which their shabby 'predecessors were so eager for: they cannot want 'them.—Accordingly, as soon as I had done my bu-'siness, I was preparing to make an handsome 'speech, and a leg, and so walk off; but I was soon 'undeceived; and found, to my no small astonish-'ment, that, if the case was altered, it was no way 'for the better for me: the present fine gentlemen 'being to the full as rapacious as the former shabby 'fellows, and with this addition to the evil, that their 'expectations were raised in proportion to their ap-'pearance, so that they must have a crown, where 'the others were satisfied with a shilling.'

'And how can it be otherwise,' returned the other, 'while the principals set them such an example of 'extravagance, and enforce obedience to it in the 'manner they do: for though their own exorbitant 'salaries enable them to live with the luxury of alder-'men at home, and make the appearance of courtiers 'abroad, how can they think, that their hackney un-'derlings shall be able to change their dress with 'the court, and appear with all the precise foppery 'of pretty fellows, if they have not clandestine ways 'of getting money: and that this is the case, I can 'give you an instance not to be contradicted.

'Perhaps you may remember a little boy that ran 'about the house here, when you were in town last. 'His mother was servant to my first wife: you can-'not forget black-eyed Nan: who was the father is 'nothing to my story, but I took care of the boy. 'When he grew up, I thought the best thing I could

'do for him, was to get him into one of the public 'offices, for he was too soft for my own business, 'and this I imagined would sharpen him, and fifty 'pounds a year keep him from being an expence to 'me. Accordingly, I got him admitted as an addi-'tional clerk, in this busy time; and, that his appear-'ance should not shame my recommendation, I 'added a London-made suit to his country wardrobe, 'which I thought good enough for him to wear every 'day.

'Well; thus equipped, to the office he went, as 'good-looking a lad as ever came from a Yorkshire 'academy, which had been the height of his educa-'tion.—But I soon found that I had been out of my 'reckoning; for, going with him to introduce him to 'the head-clerk, whom I had before spoken properly 'to in his behalf, I found the whole office in deep 'mourning, which, as it had been ordered only for the 'court, and was to hold but for a fortnight longer, I 'had never thought of dressing him in; but I soon 'found that I had not a proper opinion of the conse-'quence of the place. For the head-clerk gave me 'a friendly hint, 'that it was expected, that all the 'clerks in his majesty's offices should shew the de-'cent respect of conforming to the dress of the court 'on these solemn occasions.' I could not help ex-'claiming, I believe a little too shortly, 'What, Sir, 'upon a salary of fifty pounds a year?' 'Sir,' replied he, 'nobody is forced to take that salary; and they 'who do not like the rules of the office are at liberty 'to leave it:' and then turned off upon his heel. 'I 'beg your pardon, Sir,' said I, seeing my error, 'it 'was an oversight of mine; but it shall be amended.' —'The sooner the better, Sir,' answered he, 'for his 'lordship will be in the office tomorrow, and he must 'not see any thing so irregular; 'and pray, Sir,'

turning to the lad, 'get that fleece on your head 'shorn a little,' his hair flowed down, in modest singlets on his shoulders, 'and strive to appear some-'thing like a *gentleman*.'

'I saw it was in vain to say any thing, and so took 'the boy away with me; and had him equipped, next 'day, in all the fashionable trappings of woe, with 'his hair shorn indeed, and tied up in a bag, by a 'French barber, for I would not stand for a trifle 'when my hand was in, and then went with him my-'self, being desirous to see how he would be re-'ceived in his new appearance; but alas! I had 'forgot that indispensable article of a gentleman's 'dress, a sword, which I was therefore obliged to 'send out for directly. In a fortnight's time, the order 'for the court's going into second mourning put me 'to the same expence over again; for the rules 'of decency were not to be dispensed with; and 'then, in a month after, it was as necessary to trim 'his light grey frock with a silver edging of cox-'comb, that he might not appear worse than his fel-'lows; all which, with many other as necessary *et 'ceteras*, by the end of the first quarter, consumed 'his year's salary.

'This enraged me to that degree, that I was go-'ing to take him away directly; but the boy had by 'this time got some insight into the ways of the place, 'and prevented me, by saying, that if I would try, 'but for another quarter, he was satisfied that his 'perquisites would more than defray all such ex-'penses; and so I find they do, for though he is 'now as smart, well-dressed a young fellow as any 'about town, he has never since troubled me for a 'shilling: nay, more than all this, assures me, there 'are some of his fellow clerks who keep footmen and

'horses, and have routs and concerts at their houses, 'as regularly as people of the first rank; and all by 'the perquisites of a place of fifty pounds a year.

'Now, as all those perquisites are draw-backs 'upon us; as I said before, we cannot carry on the 'business on the usual terms, if we do not bring up 'our loss in the quality of the goods, for it would be 'absurd to expect, that we should lower our living 'to let such fellows run away with the profit of our 'industry. In short, my wife's chariot shall not be 'put down, nor will I deny myself a bottle of claret 'to give you, or any other friend, to save all the sea-'men in Britain from perishing with cold: charity 'begins at home; I will insist upon having those 'pedlars prevented from interloping upon our trade; 'and so, Sir, my service to you.'

CHAPTER XII.

Chrysal's master gives his friend some hints, that make him lower his note. An uncommon piece of generosity returned more politely than could be expected from the parties. An odd story of an unfashionable steward. The success of Chrysal's meditation in favour of his late master.

MY master had heard him out, though not with the greatest patience, and now taking the opportunity of his stopping to drink. 'All this may be true,' said

he, 'and what you propose might possibly have 'been done, and with the effect you desire, some time 'ago: but matters are altered a good deal, at pre- 'sent both among the gentlemen of the navy, and 'here too, as I am told: and indeed, in respect to 'this affair, those things are made so infamously 'bad, and rated so high, that nobody can speak in 'defence of them: nay, it even goes almost against 'my own conscience to *utter* them; for, only think 'with yourself, what a bare-faced imposition it is, to 'make a poor wretch pay seven shillings for a coarse 'rotten jacket, when even a Jew shall sell him a 'sound one, and of finer stuff, for four and sixpence; 'and every thing else at the same rate. In short, 'this point is so overstrained, that it will probably 'overturn the whole trade in the end; for several of 'the captains are so provoked at it, that they take 'every method they can to prevent the men from 'taking up any thing from us: particularly that 'which I hinted before, of keeping off the alehouse- 'keepers, and such people, and encouraging slop- 'sellers to come on board, when the men are paying, 'by which means they buy good comfortable clothes, 'at half the price of our rotten trash: indeed, one of 'them went so far, as to buy in a parcel of good 'shoes, at his own expense, and make a present of a 'pair a-piece to all his *top-men*, when they were go- 'ing out on a cruize, as they had spent their money, 'and could not buy for themselves, and our shoes 'were so bad, that the first time they went aloft with 'them, after they were wet, the ratlings tore them all 'to pieces, so that it was a common thing to see a 'man come down bare-footed, who had gone up with 'a new pair of shoes on. Though it is but just to 'comfort you, with an account of the return which he met with for his kindness, which was no less

'than a *round-robin** to the lords of the admiralty, 'for his refusing to let them go ashore, and spend 'their money, in the same manner, next time they 'came in.'

'And such a return may their officiousness always 'meet with,' replied the other, 'for meddling with 'matters which do not concern them: cannot they be 'content with their own large gains, without inter-'fering to hinder others? But I see how it is: the 'spirit of patriotism has got into them too, forsooth, 'and they must be shewing their regard to the pub-'lic! What an evil effect will the bad example of 'one man have! There was a time, when they 'would not have dared to do this. To say the truth, 'my friend, this is not the first alarm we have re-'ceived on this head: though what to do about it, 'we cannot tell: indeed, I believe we must e'en 'mend our hands; which, as half a loaf is better 'than no bread, hard as it is upon us, is preferable 'to losing the trade quite; in the mean time, I am 'obliged to you and your captain for your friendship, 'and hope you will accept of *this* return.' They then proceeded to settle their accounts, as soon as which were finished, my master took his leave, and went on with his business, which was exactly of the same nature, and concluded in the same way, with every person whom they dealt with.

As soon as these transactions were ended, his next care was to pass his captain's accounts, which he also succeeded in, without any difficulty, though for this he was more indebted to the chance of a lucky

* The name that seamen call their complaints against their captain; it is taken from the manner of their signing them, which is in a circle, so that there is no knowing who signs first.

minute, than he had apprehended. For they were no sooner closed, than an affair happened that gave a turn, entirely new, to the whole course of business, in that channel.

When the accounts of the next captain came to be examined, the clerk glancing his eye cursorily over them, in the usual manner, on looking at the amount, 'There must be some mistake here,' said he, 'How 'so, Sir,' said the captain, who was present, 'let 'me look at the account, if you please.' 'No, Sir, 'there is no mistake, I believe.'—'Pray, where do 'you mean?'—'In the casting it up, Sir,' answered the clerk, 'you see, the amount is made to be but 'eight hundred pounds.'—'Nor should it be more,' replied the captain, 'I summed up the account my-'self, and these figures are of my own writing.'—'How can that possibly be, Sir,' returned the clerk in a surprise, 'but eight hundred pounds for all the 'repairs, *wear and tear*, of a man of war, on such a 'station, for four years! I suppose then, Sir, the 'ship had a thorough repair going out, and wants 'the like now!—To be sure, it can be done better 'and cheaper here, than abroad, and therefore you 'were in the right to bring her home to get it.'—'Not 'at all, Sir,' added the captain, 'that was not the 'case; she had no thorough repair going out, and is 'come home in better order than she went, as this 'return of the officers of the yard shews.'—'Good 'God! Sir, how did you manage?'—'To the best of 'my judgment, Sir, I laid out nothing but what I 'thought necessary, and I charged nothing but what 'I laid out: I mean not to arraign the conduct of 'others: I only speak for myself. In these cases I 'look upon a man as a steward to the public! and I 'should think it as great dishonesty to betray, or 'break, that trust, as to wrong a private person.'

This speech was heard with astonishment, and returned with a cold compliment, as it came too home to many, to meet general approbation; however, the affair necessarily had an effect not very agreeable to some present; for, the next captain's accounts arising to near four times the sum of the last, such an immediate precedent made the difference so glaring, that it was impossible to avoid putting a stop to them, and so he was mulcted his whole four years pay: though ours, which had been still higher, had gone off smoothly, and without the least remark.

My master having concluded this affair so happily, proceeded next on the great cause of his coming to town, in which, with our assistance, he laboured so successfully, that the captain's *mistake* met only a gentle reprimand.

I here came into the possession of a new master, and immediately after changed my Spanish appearance for the fashion of the country, and in the shape of a *guinea*, entered into the most extensive state of sublunary influence, becoming the price of every name that is respected under heaven.

CHAPTER XIII.

Chrysal explains some farther properties of his nature. He changes his appearance for the mode of the country; and enters into the service of a noble lord. The sagacity of Mr. Poundage, and his address in business.

I AM now entering upon a stage, where the scenes are so various, and so quickly changed, that it will require your strictest attention to keep pace with my relation. But to make this the easier to you, and to disencumber your surprise from doubts, at my repeating the past lives of persons, in whose possession I have been but a few moments, I must premise to you, that our knowledge is very different from that of men. I have told you, that we know all things *intuitively*, without the trouble, delay, and errors of *discourse* or reasoning. I must now further inform you, that this intuition extends not only to the present face of things, but also has a retrospect to the whole series of their existence, from its first beginning: the *concatenation* between cause and effect being so plain to our eyes, that let us but see any one event of the life of a man, and we immediately know every particular that preceded it.

As to *futurity*, indeed, it is not yet determined how far forward we can look into that; some allowing us to have the same power of *foresight* as we have of

retrospect; which was the opinion that supported the credit of oracles in former days. But that notion is now exploded, and men argue that our *foresight* extends only to *natural* causes and effects: but in the actions of man, his *free-will* so often breaks that order, that it is impossible for us to know this moment how he will act the next, from any observation of the past; and they think they prove their argument by this, that if spirits could fore-know all a man's actions, it would spare them the trouble of tempting him to any particular one. But this by the bye! for as I shall confine my narrative to matters already past, without ever foretelling any thing, it is not necessary for me to determine a question, that opens such a field for the guesses of the learned. But to return to my story.

From the *Mint*, where I put on the shape of a guinea, I was sent to the Bank, where the pleasure I had felt at the beauty and convenience of my new figure was considerably cooled, at my being thrown into so large a heap, as took away all my particular consequence, and seemed to threaten a long state of inactivity, before it might come to my turn to be brought into action. But I soon found myself agreeably mistaken, and that the *circulation* there was too quick to admit of such delay: for I was that very day paid out to a noble lord, in his pension from the ministry.

It was about two in the afternoon, when I was brought to his lordship's levee, where the grandeur of his looks, and the magnificence of every thing about him, made me so pleased with my situation, that I thought I could be satisfied to fix my abode with him for some time.

He was just arisen, and seated at the fire, leaning on a writing table covered with green velvet, on which lay some books open, and several letters which he had just broke the seals of, and was beginning to read, while a female servant, beautiful as Hebe, poured out his tea at a side-board, and a page like Ganymede, handed it to him.

In this easy indifference he sat, casting an eye upon a book, or reading a paragraph in a letter, between every sip of his breakfast, when I was laid upon his table by his steward, with these words,—'Two hun-'dred, my lord.'—'Two hundred,' replied his lordship, 'the order was for five hundred!—'But, my 'lord, the butcher, the baker!'—'What are these 'wretches to me? Is not my whole estate sufficient 'for them?' 'My lord, there is not a shilling to be 'got from your tenants, the times are so bad, and 'the taxes so high! and an ounce of provisions could 'not be had.'—'Then you might have all fasted! I 'must have money for this evening; I am engaged 'in a PARTY, and cannot be off.'—'My lord, your 'lordship's tailor desired me to speak to you; he is 'to appear before his commissioners to-morrow, and 'begs——' 'What can I do? I would relieve him 'if I could, but I have no money for myself: I can-'not, will not do without five hundred more this 'evening, get it where or how you will.'—'My lord, 'I was thinking to apply to Mr. Discount, the scri-'vener, but he said the last time, that he would lend 'no more on that estate, without the immediate power 'of cutting the timber.'—'Well, damn him, let him 'have it, though it will not be fit to cut these ten 'years; and, do you hear, get me a thousand to-day.' —'A thousand, my lord! you said five hundred: I 'am afraid he will think a thousand too much!' 'Then he shall never have it; let me do as I will;

'do not I know that the timber is worth twice as 'much this moment, if I could wait to set it to sale? 'I will not be imposed on by the rascal: I'll go my-'self to my neighbour Worthland directly; he is a 'man of honour, and will be above taking advantage, 'though I did oppose his election.'—'As your lord-'ship pleases for that. But then, perhaps, Mr. Dis-'count will call in all his money, if he saw you put 'yourself into other hands; beside, I am not certain 'that he will refuse, and therefore I should think it 'better to try him first; you may do this after. 'Though I must take the liberty to say, I should be 'sorry to see your lordship stoop to Sir John Worth-'land, after all the expense you have been at to give 'him trouble. For to be sure he would boast of it 'in the country, if it were only to make you look lit-'tle, and prevent your opposing him again.'—'Why 'there may be something in that: and therefore see 'what is to be done with Discount; but I must have 'a thousand at any rate, five hundred of which give 'to poor Buckram, and bring me the other as soon 'as possible, for I am in haste out.'—'Then your 'lordship had better sign this deed first, to save the 'time of coming back again, if he should do it.'—'Aye, let me see it; there: and make haste.'—And then turning to his page, 'Reach me that pa-'per, this pen is so good it tempts me to write a let-'ter, while I wait for Poundage's return.' And so humming a new tune, he went on with his breakfast without the least concern.

You are so great a stranger to the ways of that part of the world which deals in money-matters, that you will be surprised when I tell you, that, while this Mr. Poundage brought me from the Bank, he had called upon Mr. Discount, and brought him to his lord's to do his business

But you must not imagine this was to lend his lordship money. Nothing less. It was only to appear as the nominal lender of his lordship's own money, which Poundage had that very morning received from some of his tenants in the country, and which if he could not bring it in better, he meant to replace with part of the price of the timber, which he was to buy in Discount's name, who was a creature of his own.

So remarkable a transaction gave me a curiosity to take a view of Poundage's life, the main lines of which I will just touch over, while you may think him gone for the money, and his lordship dressing for his engagement.

CHAPTER XIV.

The history of Mr. Thomas Poundage. His lordship goes to his appointment. An evening's entertainment in high life. Chrysal changes his service: his reflections on the ruling passion of the times.

MR. Thomas Poundage was the offspring of a gypsy; who had left him on the straw he was born on, in an old barn near his lordship's father's, his weakness and deformity making her not think him worth the trouble of carrying away.

The old lord himself happening to be the first who heard his cries, as he was riding by, took compassion

on the little helpless wretch, and ordered him to be taken care of at his own expense, and not sent to the parish.

Such an uncommon instance of charity was immediately attributed to a tenderer motive: a suspicion however injurious to his lordship, so advantageous to the *foundling*, that it doubled the care and attendance on him, and made him appear of such consequence that Mr. Thomas Poundage himself, his lordship's steward, condescended to stand god-father for him, and gave him his own name. As Master Tommy grew up, he shewed all the sharpness and cunning of his race, which old Poundage representing to his lord, as a capacity for learning, he was put to the best schools; and being of the same age with his lordship's eldest son, his present master, was settled as an humble companion and attendant upon him; in which station, the pliancy of his temper soon gained him his master's favour, as his secrecy and discretion did his confidence; no service appearing too difficult or mean for his undertaking, to please his master, especially in the mysteries of intrigue; nor a look ever betraying his success.

These services naturally produced an intimacy, that opened to him all his master's secrets, and gave him such consequence with him, that upon the death of his father, old Poundage was *superannuated upon a pension*, and the place given to him, in which he had behaved himself so judiciously, that, in about ten years, he had amassed so large a fortune, as to be able to supply his master's wants (with the assistance of his own money sometimes) without the scandal of exposing them to any other: a service that amply recompensed, to his lordship's honour, whatever prejudice it may be supposed to do his affairs.

'Tis true, his supplanting his godfather and benefactor, old Poundage, had not met with the approbation of such as was not well acquainted with the world, and particularly as the old gentleman in his rage, had accounted for all his kindness to him, by owning a relation, which he had before strove to fix upon his lord, by many plain insinuations, though he now said he had long before revealed to his ungrateful son the secret of his birth.

However, if he had communicated his secret, our son of fortune had kept it so well, that he could now deny it with safety; nor had he profited so little by his father's example, as to be moved with a suggestion that evidently appeared, however true it might be in itself, to spring at that time from resentment. And as he could not expect to reap any great advantage from being acknowledged for the spurious son of one who had many legitimate children to inherit his fortune, he thought it better to confirm the former opinion, by his slights of the claim of Poundage, and since he must be the bastard of one of them, chuse the lord before his servant.

But to return to my master. He was dressed by that time Poundage came back with the money, when taking the five hundred *for his own use*, he went to his appointment.

As to the other five hundred, which he had ordered to be paid to his taylor, for fear of the wretch's applying to the lord himself, in his despair, Poundage did send for him, and, *in compassion to his distresses, advanced him four hundred pounds*, of his own money, *for he had not a shilling of his lordship's in his hands; for which piece of service he desired no other consideration, than a receipt for five hundred pounds*

though it might be so long before he could get it back, that he expected to be a loser by his friendship, which Mr. Buckram need not, as he could bring it up in his next bill.——Of this I came to the knowledge some time after, in the course of my circulation.

It was five o'clock, and dinner just serving up, when my lord joined his company. At dinner, and during the reign of the bottle for a couple of hours after, the conversation turned upon all the polite topics of the times, wherein there could be no long disputes, as every difference in opinion was immediately determined by a *bet*, the supreme decision of peace, war, religion, and law. But this dissipated *pidling* soon gave way to the serious business of the evening, to which they all adjourned, with an intention and anxiety worthy of the consequence at stake.

It is impossible to give you any idea of this scene, in which every moment produced such sudden transitions from despair to exultation, from shouts of joy to the most blasphemous execration of their very being, on the vicissitudes in the momentary fortunes of the actors, that the very recollection of it is a pain even to me.

However, it made no such impression upon them: but they continued at it till about six in the *morning*, when they retired for the *night*.

In the course of the *evening*, I often went the circuit of the whole company round, and at length was carried home by a new master. But, before I say any thing of him, I must give you a few slight sketches of the characters of some others of the company, and particularly of my late lord, in whose

whole appearance and behaviour there was something so extraordinary.

There is scarce a stronger instance of the tyranny of avarice over the heart of man, than the passion for *play*, which now is so general and prevalent, as to seem in a manner to have drowned every other. The tenderest, the strongest, connections of friendship and nature, yield to the force of this resistless infatuation. The persons who esteem each other most in the world this moment, no sooner sitting down to this *decision of fate*, than they labour for each others ruin, with all the assiduity and eagerness of the most inveterate hatred and revenge.

Nor is this practice confined to those alone whom necessity may seem to stimulate to so desperate a resource; the richest are often the most infatuated with this passion, who, possessing already more than they can enjoy, hazard that, and give themselves up a prey to anxiety, and often to despair, to indulge a fruitless desire for more.

Of this last class were most of the company, among whom my *late* lord had spent this evening: some few indeed there were whom this folly had reduced to the former, and necessitated to live by their experience in the art which had been their ruin.

CHAPTER XV.

The company represented in perspective. Set a beggar on horseback, and he'll ride to the devil. A new way of parrying a dun, and paying debts of honour. A commission-broker flung. A connoisseur deceived by his own judgment and eminent taste for virtu. History of a noble breeches-maker.

I SEE your curiosity rise at the mention of so strange a scene as this must be. It is natural, and therefore shall be indulged. But, as all description must fall short of it, I shall represent it to you in perspective. Do you therefore resolve sense into imagination, *a practice not uncommon with the philosophic mind*, and to pure abstracted attention shall my words become things, and appear as visible to your eyes, as if they were purged with *euphrasy* and *rue*.

Observe now, at the head of the table, that heavy looking figure, whose saturnine complexion gives a solemnity to his appearance, even beyond his declining years. This man wore out the prime of his life in indigence and hardships, till chance by one successful stroke in his business, gave him such a fortune, as was deemed sufficient merit to deserve nobility, and entitle him to one of the first employments in the state.

Sudden elevation makes a weak head giddy; the plain, good-natured, cheerful man, is lost in the solemn proud peer; who is harder of access than his

sovereign, and seems to value himself on having all the hours he has spent in cringing to the great, repaid tenfold in attendance upon him. As to the business of his office, the whole system of human politics is in general such a jumble of blundering and villany, that I can seldom bring myself to bestow a moment's notice on it, so can say no more of his, than that the little attention and less capacity, he has for it, may most probably give just occasion for all the murmurings that are against him. But this was not the motive of my pointing him out to you. It was his infatuation to the love of play, which makes him hazard that wealth which he so long felt the want of, in hopes of acquiring more, though he has already more than he can enjoy.

This has been an unsuccessful night with him. Observe how stupified he looks at his loss! Extend the view but a few moments farther, and see how he sits down in the common hall of the tavern, among servants and chairmen, insensible of the impropriety of such a place, and unable to order his servants to carry him home: nor is it improbable that the scene he has just quitted may remain so strongly on his imagination to-morrow, that he may write down the rules of the game he has been playing at, instead of the orders of his office, as he has done once before.

Next to him, you see a short, ruddy, cheerful-looking man. That is one of the deplorable instances of the evil of this preposterous passion. With every advantage of rank, abilities, and fortune, did that person set out in life. But, alas! soon was the prospect of his future happiness and grandeur overcast! Soon did gaming reduce him not only to a necessity of prostituting his abilities to the prejudice of his country, but also of descending to every iniquitous

mystery of the art to support his practice of it; for so bewitched is he to it, that he cannot resist, though he now can scarce get any person to play with him, his want of money and his skill in the whole art are so well known.

This has been a successful evening with him, as you may see by his extraordinary flow of spirits: not that his natural vivacity ever forsakes him in the worst reverse of fortune. He has won a considerable part of the great losings of the person we have just been taking notice of; and though he has many demands upon him for every shilling of it, yet, far from thinking of paying one of them, he is this moment planning new scenes of pleasure to consume it all, choosing to let his creditors all be bankrupts, or even to compound with them as a bankrupt himself, rather than deny his appetites their full gratification.

It is impossible to convey a just notion of such a complicated character, by any description; I shall therefore just mention one or two of his actions, from which you may, in some measure, form a judgment of the whole.

Having a pressing occasion, some time ago, for an hundred guineas, he applied to one of those necessary attendants of the great, who, at the moderate interest of five hundred per cent. are always ready to supply them with money to discharge their debts of honour. This friendly gentleman, being well acquainted with the character of the borrower, made many scruples to comply with his request, till at length he suffered himself to be prevailed upon conditionally, that, if the principal and premium were not paid in a week, he should receive a guinea as a

further gratuity then, and every time after that he should demand his money, till it was paid. Accordingly, at the end of the week he made his demand, and, as he expected, received his guinea; from which time he took care to call upon him every second or third day, till he had received his money more than twice told, thus in single guineas, for forbearance; always timing his applications, when he saw his debtor in company with persons, before whom he would not even enter into an expostulation, for fear of having the affair known, so that as soon as he saw him approach, without waiting to be asked, he used to pull out his purse, and calling him to him, gave him a guinea, to go and buy something for him; an errand the other sufficiently understood.

The constant repetition of this could not always escape observation, nor was the cause of it unsuspected by most of his acquaintance; some of whom happening to hint it to him one evening, when wine had taken away all reserve, he, who was above being ashamed of any thing, honestly owned the whole transaction, and joined in the general laugh at his own folly: however, as the secret was now out, he resolved to submit to the imposition no longer; and the next time his friend waited upon him, instead of hurrying him away as before, he publicly entered into a discussion of his demand, and as he could not deny his having received more than double what he had lent, the debt was adjudged by the company to be sufficiently discharged, and he was literally sent off without his errand.

This story shews only the levity and inconsiderateness of his temper, and the distresses, in which they entangled him: but the following is of a blacker

hue, and will prove, that he is capable of doing any thing to extricate himself from those distresses, and provide for the gratification of his passions.

Not very long ago, a young gentleman, who had a military turn, collected the whole of his small fortune, to purchase himself a commission in the army. Having lodged his money in the hands of his *agent*, who, for the convenience of making use of it, and to enhance the price of his own trouble, was in no haste to dispatch the affair, he made an excursion to the country town, in which this gentleman's seat was, and where he happened to be at that time.

As the hospitality of his temper made his house open to every stranger, who had the appearance of a gentleman, the young soldier soon became acquainted with him, and in return for the friendship for which he mistook the general affability of his conversation, and to display his own importance, told him his present situation, and the method he had taken to procure success to his hopes of a truncheon. His friend expressed the strongest approbation of his spirit, and encouraged his hopes, but told him that he had chosen the worst way of entering into the army, as the sum of money, which he had given the agent to purchase him only a pair of colours, applied properly to some of the persons in office, and backed by good interest, would not only procure him a cornetcy of horse, at present, which was of three times that value, but would also establish such an interest for him, as should greatly accelerate his rise to still higher promotions.—Struck with such a promising prospect as this speech opened to him, the young gentleman answered, that he was sensible of the truth of what the other said, but that it was his unhappiness to have had no friend to direct him how

to apply his money properly, much less to back him afterward. 'That's very hard,' replied his friend, 'I wish I had known you sooner.'—This hint was enough; the young gentleman, fired with such flattering hopes, flew directly to town, and, finding that his agent had not yet concluded the purchase for him, took his money out of his hands, and returning to the country, in the confidence of his heart, went and presented it to his friend, throwing himself entirely upon his patronage and protection.

It is probable, that, when this gentleman began the discourse which gave occasion to this action, he meant no more by it, than to display his own judgment and interest, without any farther design; but the sight of five hundred pounds was a temptation he could not resist.—He, therefore, with seeming surprise and reluctance, received the money, and took the young gentleman into his care.

For some time he fed him with hopes of immediate success; but, his impatience beginning to grow troublesome, upon his return to town, for the winter, he gave him to understand, 'that he was offended at his 'importunity: that, since he had undertaken to serve 'him, he would do it as soon as he could; but that 'he need not give himself the trouble of calling upon 'him any more, as he would receive sufficient notice 'of his success in the public papers.'—Saying which words, he left him. Thunder-struck at this speech, the young gentleman withdrew, and, meeting one of his acquaintance, informed him of what had happened. This person, who was perfectly acquainted with the gentleman's character, saw immediately into the whole affair, and explained the imposition to him. This made him mad; he returned directly to demand his money, but was denied admittance, nor would his

letters even be received by the porter. His case was now desperate; while he had paid attendance upon his patron, he had exhausted his means of subsistence to the last mite, so that he now was in want of a morsel of bread. In this situation, a moment was not to be lost; and luckily, his despair suggested to him the only means that could possibly have procured him redress. He drew up a state of his case in a very few words, and, putting on the best suit of cloaths he had left, went the very next day to court, where, in sight of his patron, he bent his knee to his sovereign, and presented it to him. Something particular in his air and manner struck the monarch's notice; he read the petition; and then reached it to this gentleman, in whose altered countenance he soon read the truth of the contents; turning, therefore, from him, with a look of ineffable reproof and contempt, he ordered the secretary at war to make out a commission for the young gentleman that very day, and from that hour has never held the other in the least degree of esteem, or favour; but he is insensible to such disgrace, and while he can gratify his passions, in the manner you see at present, cares not what the world thinks or says of him.

Opposite to him, on the other side of the table, observe an uncommonly large-boned bulky man, this is one of the instances of the insufficiency and weakness of human laws, which, striving to remedy one evil, often make way for a greater. That man is now advanced to the foremost rank of the militia list, merely by *seniority!* A grievous abuse of that institution, which, to prevent favour from advancing its minions over friendless merit, ordains, that no senior officer shall serve under his junior; but now, by the natural force of human perversion, this well-designed

regulation is made a pretext for giving command to such as have no other claim to it, than (what should indeed incapacitate them) old age, and so keeping back the advance, and damping the ardour, of youth.

As there is no man without some particular ambition, his has taken a turn, which perhaps you may think the most remote from his profession of a soldier. Pictures! painting is the sole object of his admiration, the only knowledge he values himself upon. Tell him of a siege, or a battle, an attack, or a retreat, conducted with the greatest skill, and he hears you unmoved, nor will interrupt your account with a single question: but name Rembrandt or Titian, and he immediately gives you a dissertation on their excellencies, and the difference of their schools! Tell him but of a sale of pictures, on the day of a review, and, if he is forced to feign sickness to excuse his attendance in the field, he will be at it.

Such absurd passions are always the objects of artifice and imposition. An ingenious painter of this country, not very long since, whose works would have been a credit to the best of foreign schools, but were despised at home, bethought himself of a way to turn this person's foible to some advantage. He made some designs, landscapes, and other drawings, in the manner of some of the greatest of the ancient Italian masters, whose names he marked upon the backs of them, in the characters of their times, and giving them *the cast* of age, made them up in an Italian chest, and by the assistance of a captain of a ship, had them entered at the custom-house, as directly from Italy, and consigned to a stranger, as from a friend there, to be disposed of in London.

The report soon reached this lover of *virtu*, who was so ravished with the thought of gaining such a treasure, that he flew to the place, and, *being convinced by his judgment of the authenticity of them*, bought them all together, for a very large sum, but far short of their *real* value, had they been to be disposed of by a person *acquainted* with it.

Though this success was very pleasing, and useful to the painter, he did not stop here. This person had someway taken a dislike to him, which he indulged, by running down his work. This, therefore, was an opportunity for revenge not to be missed. He let him boast of his acquisition in all companies, and display his judgment in proving them to be the genuine productions of those great masters, by criticisms which none but a connoisseur could make: but then, as soon as the whole affair was so public, that there was no denying it, what does the incensed artist but produce the counterparts of them all, which he had kept for the occasion, so like as not possibly to be known asunder, and unravelled the whole affair, taking care only to keep himself clear of the law, by saying, that he had sold those things as of no value, at a very small price, to a *Jew!*

This was a severe stroke! It overturned the only reputation which he had even an ambition of, and robbed him of a large sum of money beside; to recover which loss, and divert the chagrin of the whole deceit, he has recourse to play, which he follows with the eagerness you see.

But his is not the only absurd passion that strikes the notice of an accurate observer of mankind. The person on his right hand was born in the first rank of the state, but by some unlucky mistake, the qua-

lifications which fell to his share belonged to one of the lowest classes of mechanics. While others of his rank are marshalling armies, and planning conquest, correcting the abuses, or studying to rise upon the ruins of the state, his utmost ambition is, to cut out a buckskin to advantage, and be reckoned the best breeches-maker of his time.—Harmless as such an humble turn may seem, it involves the noble artist in many whimsical distresses.

His passion for breeches-making is so strong, that he never sits near any person, but his hand is immediately and unpremeditatedly, applied to his thigh, which he has no sooner stroked down two or three times, than he thinks he conceives the size and shape of it so exactly, that he can completely fit it, without the trouble of taking any other measure; and accordingly never fails to introduce a dissertation on the art, which he concludes with the demonstrative proof of his skill, of offering to make a present of a pair of his own making. The advantage of such an offer, and the pleasure of encouraging so illustrious a mechanic, make his present always accepted, so that he has generally the most business of any one in the trade, though some accidents have happened, that have almost made him afraid to pursue such an indiscriminate method of soliciting custom.

Happening some time ago, in a very large company, to sit near a young gentleman, whose delicate complexion had brought him, though most unjustly, under a suspicion of indulging unnatural passions, he applied his hand to the gentleman's thigh, and began to feel it all over, to take measure of it, according to his custom. The gentleman, who was not ignorant of the imputation he lay under, and therefore was more quickly sensible of every thing that might pos-

sibly seem to allude to it, thought this application to his thigh was meant either to tempt, or insult him, for he had been informed that those wretches often make their infamous addresses in this manner, and was enraged at it to such a degree, that, forgetting all respect to the company present, and to the rank of his supposed lover, he felled the poor breeches-maker to the ground, and, starting from his chair, drew his sword, and would have run him through the body, had not his arm been happily seized by the gentleman who sat next him.

It is not easy to describe the astonishment of the company at such an outrage, which they could attribute to nothing but phrenzy: but the gentleman soon undeceived them. 'Infamous, unnatural wretch!' exclaimed he, as soon as rage permitted him utterance, 'I'll make you know, that I am not an object 'of your brutal passions. I have exposed you here, 'but your infamy shall not be confined to this com-'pany, I'll publish it to all the world. Unhand me, 'gentlemen, and let me wash off the disgrace of such 'an attempt with the monster's blood! I'll gladly 'pay my own life as a forfeit to the defect of the 'law, that has provided no punishment for such odi-'ous crimes.'—To the greater part of the company this speech was quite unintelligible, and only confirmed the suspicion of his madness; but one of them, who had observed the gentleman change countenance upon the noble mechanic's applying his hand to his thigh, soon cleared up the mystery. 'I be-'lieve, Sir,' said he, 'you have been too hasty, and 'mistaken an intention, not only harmless in itself, 'but generous also, for one of a very different na-'ture!—Have you any other reason for accusing his 'lordship of unnatural designs upon you, beside his 'laying his hand upon your thigh, and feeling it?'—

'No, Sir, but that I think enough; too much for 'him to offer, or for me to bear; nor will I bear it.' —'I do not pretend, Sir, to tell you what you must 'bear, but this I can tell you, that you have entirely, 'and most injuriously, mistaken his lordship, who 'meant no more by that action which gave you such 'offence, than just to take your measure for a pair of 'breeches, which, if you had not been so hasty in 'your resentment, he would have made you a present 'of.'—'Death, Sir, do you make a jest of me?'— His lordship, who had heard their discourse, and was by this time so far recovered of his fright as to be able to speak, interposed here, or the affair might probably have taken another turn.—'No, indeed, 'Sir,' said he, 'he does not jest! I meant nothing 'more: and all the company present knows, that I 'never had any passion in my life, but for breeches-'making; and, if you apprehended any thing else, 'you were very much mistaken.'

This speech, and the manner in which it was delivered, were not to be resisted. They disarmed the gentleman's rage instantly, and his only concern was how to make up the matter, so as to avoid the ridicule of such a mistake. He, therefore, told his lordship, that he was very sorry for his error, and hoped that he would attribute the consequences of it to that delicate sensibility, which every man of honour must have under such an apprehension. This was sufficient: his lordship, instead of harbouring resentment, was glad to get so easily rid of the affair: and to convince the gentleman, both of the sincerity of his reconciliation, and that he had no other design than what he said, in the action that gave him the offence, he undertook to make him a pair of buckskin breeches, only from the measure he had taken, that should fit him better than any he had worn in his life.

CHAPTER XVI.

The character of a Virtuoso. The history of an horned cock; with some curious philosophical remarks on cornuted animals.

OPPOSITE to him sits one of those philosophers who build their pretences to scientific fame, on making collections of the anomalous *frolics* of nature, without ever attempting to investigate the wisdom and power displayed in the regular process of her works. In the course of this study, a whimsical adventure lately happened to the noble Virtuoso before us. A man that bought poultry round the country, to supply the markets of this great city, having got intelligence of his lordship's taste, resolved to turn it to his own advantage. He accordingly procured a most beautiful game cock, and sawing off the spurs of another cock that had very long ones, contrived to fix them firmly with wax on the head of this bird, on each side of the comb, with the points turned backwards, and inclining from each other, like the horns of a goat, in such a manner, that they appeared to have grown naturally there.

As soon as he found that he could bring his scheme to a probability of success, he waited on the virtuoso, and giving notice, that he had something curious to communicate, was immediately admitted to an audience, in his *musæum*, where he informed

him, that he had received intelligence, from a particular friend of his, a Scotch pedlar, that in the farthest part of the Highlands, there was a most remarkable cock, with two surprising horns growing out of the back of his head, in the possession of an old woman, who was famous for the *second sight;* that upon his admiring the creature, the woman had offered to sell it to him for a pound of tobacco and a bottle of brandy, but he was afraid to meddle with it, as the country said it was her *familiar*, though he had seen it himself scrape the dunghill, and tread the hens, like any other cock: and that upon hearing the news, he was come to inform his lordship of it, and to offer his service to go all the way himself for the bird, and bring him up, if he would promise to reimburse him the expences of his journey, and give him some little consideration for his trouble; and to convince his lordship, that he had no design to impose upon him, he would go, at his own hazard, and desire nothing if he did not succeed.

The first mention of such a curiosity threw the virtuoso into the highest rapture: he embraced the fellow, conjured him not to lose a minute, nor drop the least syllable of the affair to any person living, till he had brought him the cock: and to secure his fidelity, pulled out his purse, and gave him ten guineas, with a promise of fifty more, the moment he should receive him. The man promised him every thing he required, and went away, hugging himself in the success of his scheme. Accordingly, he left that part of the country directly, and, taking care to keep beyond the reach of his lordship's inquiry, followed his business as usual, for the time that he might be thought to have spent in his expedition. In the mean while, the virtuoso could not conceal the pride of his heart, on the prospect of so great an acquisition; but in all

his letters to his philosophical correspondents gave mysterious hints of something immensely fine, rare, and unnatural, and assumed the importance due to the possession of such a treasure.

At length the moment arrived that he was to complete his happiness. About ten o'clock at night the man alighted at his lordship's gate, and sending in his name, was immediately shewn into the musæum, where his lordship flew to meet him, in the utmost impatience. As soon as the man entered, all over spattered with dirt, and putting on every appearance of fatigue, 'Well, my good friend,' said the virtuoso, with the greatest eagerness, 'what success? Where 'is the dear creature? Shall I be so happy as to see 'him in my possession?'—'My lord,' answered the man, 'I must beg your pardon for a moment, I am 'not able to speak: I am quite worn out'—and then dropping upon a chair, as if he was just ready to faint, his lordship immediately rung for some cordial for him, which he took from the servant himself at the door (for he would not admit any one living) and gave him with his own hand. When he was a little recovered, 'I beg your lordship's pardon,' continued he, 'but I could not hold out a moment longer: 'what with travelling all day, and watching all night, 'I am quite worn out,'—'But where is the bird?'— 'And then such offers as I have refused! Well, to 'be sure, I trusted to your lordship's generosity, for 'I shall never have such another opportunity of 'making my fortune: for behold the thing had taken 'wind, and there was my lord duke's and Sir Tho- 'mas's men, and twenty more, riding for life, to try 'who should get him, but I had got the start of them, 'and was coming back with the pretty creature in 'my bosom; but I let them all go on their fool's er- 'rand, and did not say any thing to them, for how

'did I know but they might kill me, to get him away 'from me?' Having finished his speech, which the other did not choose to interrupt, though he listened to it with the utmost impatience, the fellow opened his horseman's coat, and with the greatest caution produced the wonderful creature, the head and neck of which had been carefully thrust into a box made on purpose, for fear the coat should rub off the horns.

His lordship's rapture at the sight is not to be described. He instantly pulled out his purse, and paying down the promised price, took possession of him, and bid the man go and refresh himself for that night, with the best in the house, and in the morning he would consider how he might make him a return more equal to his service, by procuring him some handsome place at court. But the fellow had other designs in his head than ever to see his face more. However, he kept that to himself, and retiring, with many professions of gratitude, left his house directly, and took his leave of that country for ever.

In the mean time, his lordship had notice that supper was served up; but, though he had company the first of rank in his house, he was so wrapt up in the contemplation of his new acquisition, that he sent word he was taken suddenly ill, and could not possibly attend them: he then dispatched several servants express to his learned friends, to desire their attendance next day to see the most astonishing and beautiful composition nature had ever made in the animal world, and devoted the rest of the night to the drawing up a proper description of this surprising *horned cock*, with a physical inquiry into the substance of his horns, and a philosophical attempt to account for such an extraordinary production. When

this work of uncommon learning was finished, he indulged himself with taking another view of his darling bird, and then put him in a beautiful cage, from which he dislodged two Chinese pheasants, and placed him in his musæum, next to his favourite horned owl.

It was six in the morning before he retired to rest; when his head was so full of his new acquisition, that he lay dreaming of cows with wings, and cocks with horns, and such like wonderful works of nature, till the arrival of his learned friends at noon. As soon as their arrival was announced, he arose directly, and without waiting to visit his cock, to whom he had given a sufficiency of provisions before he left him, went to meet them. After several impatient enquiries into the cause of so sudden and peremptory a summons, the virtuoso, in all the mysterious importance, which so inestimable an acquisition gave him, produced his own learned labours of that morning, and when they had sufficiently studied and examined them, introduced them to a sight of the unparalleled subject: 'There, gentlemen,' said he, in conscious exultation, 'there, my friends, behold the most un-'common, unnatural, and inestimable curiosity, that 'ever enriched the collection of a philosopher. There 'behold an indisputable proof of their error, who 'assert that nature has placed an immoveable 'boundary between the quadruped and winged crea-'tions. There behold a sufficient encouragement to 'urge your indefatigable search for monsters, and to 'mix the whole animal creation in coition, for the 'production of mermaids, griffins, centaurs, harpies, 'and horned cocks, and all that beautiful confusion 'which yield such inexpressible delight to an inqui-'sitive, philosophic mind.'

While he was making this harangue, the company approached the gilded cage, that contained this inestimable prodigy, and stooping down to contemplate him, were surprised to find one of his horns fallen off, and the other moved considerably from the situation in which it had been described to them: for doleful to relate, the cock, which was of the right game breed, had unfortunately taken offence at the visage of the owl his neighbour, and in his struggles to come to come at him, through the bars of the cage, had rubbed off one, and displaced the other of his horns. When this deplorable misfortune was mentioned to the owner, it is impossible to describe his astonishment and confusion. He stooped hastily to be satisfied of the truth of it, and beholding the irreparable ruin of his pride, gave one dismal groan, and fell at his length on the floor, in a swoon.

While his servants, who were summoned upon the occasion, were fetching him to himself, one of the philosophers opened the cage, and taking out the bird, they all entered into a discussion of so strange a phænomenon. After many learned and ingenious solutions, one of them declared, that it had always been his opinion, in which the present case abundantly confirmed him, that all cornuted animals cast their horns every year, like the stag, and that the present case was no more than that; of which he was perfectly convinced, as he could plainly feel, with his finger, the growing horn, which had thus thrust off the old one; 'So that, my lord,' said he, addressing himself to the owner, who by this time was recovered, and attending to their remarks, 'instead of 'being vexed at such an event, you have reason to 'rejoice, as it explains a very difficult point, and you 'will now have an opportunity of tracing the growth 'of this beautiful prodigy.'

The sage solution administered some consolation to the virtuoso, who immediately took the bird in his own hands, and feeling the lump of wax, which had fastened on the fictitious horn, was convinced of the truth of his friend's accurate observation, which he himself farther confirmed, by taking notice, that as no blood followed the avulsion, it was evident that the horn was of itself ready to fall off, without the assistance of the cock's struggling (for they had caught him at that work) as the dislocation of the other horn, shewed that that was not in the same state of ripeness, and, therefore, it had resisted that force. Consciousness of the sagacity of this remark, in some degree, restored his spirits, and he was going to proceed, when one of the company, who had taken up and examined the fallen horn, and had not given any opinion on the matter, interrupted him dryly, and said, that the hypothesis was certainly very ingenious, but he believed the affair might be solved a readier way; for, upon examination of the supposed horn, he found it was only a cock's spur, which had been fastened upon the creature's head with wax, as appeared evidently by the remains of the wax, upon the end of the spur in his hand; and, if they would let him pull off the other, he would undertake that the imposture would be too plain to admit of any doubt.

The mention of this threw them all into confusion, as they had all given their opinions, positively, of the honour of which it deprived them, and cut short many more, which they were ready to offer: they, therefore, stood looking at each other, till he stretched out his hand to pull off the other horn, when they all interposed, particularly the owner, and insisted that they must be better satisfied of what he had advaneed, before they could permit so rash an

experiment. But the bird himself cut short the dispute; for some of the company happening to have snuff in their fingers, it got into the cock's eyes, and made him shake his head with such violence, that off flew the horn in the owner's face. The person who had made the discovery, immediately took it up, and shewed such plain proof of the trick, that it could no longer be denied.

It is impossible to describe the shame and vexation in every philosophic face present, at this lamentable event. The abused purchaser, in particular, was almost mad: however, after mature deliberation, it was agreed upon, for the credit of philosophy, to bear the deceit in silence, rather than expose themselves to the ridicule of the unlearned, by seeking satisfaction from the cheat. As for the cock, he was immediately sacrificed to *Æsculapius*, to avert the consequences which such a disappointment might have upon the health and understanding of the company, and to remove such an evidence of their disgrace. But all their caution was in vain: the person who first detected the deceit, could not deny his vanity the pleasure of making his sagacity known; and the fellow, finding his trick passed over thus with impunity, could not avoid boasting of it: and to this day diverts his customers with the history of the horned cock.

CHAPTER XVII.

More mortification to human vanity. A reason for submitting to be pillaged by sharpers. What's got over the devil's back is spent under his belly. Filial piety remarkably rewarded.

I SEE you are shocked at the inconsistency, vices, and folly of mankind; but this is owing to your recluse life, and want of acquaintance with the world? To an accurate observer, things appear in their proper colours; and, if the picture should be unpleasing, the fault is in the subject, not in the painter, who honestly represents nature as he finds her. As to those, of whom I have given you these short sketches, they are wealthy, and wealth is an excuse for all things; the nobility of their birth not yielding a greater sanction to their persons, than their money does to their vices and follies. And where these tend to the dissipation of that wealth, they only enhance their welcome, in every place of polite resort: indeed, the society, in which you seem at present assembled, subsists entirely by these, as by the institution of it, no person can be admitted who has not wealth to dissipate; as no person will desire to be admitted, who has not a vicious avarice for the wealth of others, and folly enough to hazard his own for the acquisition of it.

But, though folly is, in the strictness of truth, thus essential to this association, there are many of the members, who, in the general meaning of the word, are entirely above the imputation of it: yet so prevalent is the infatuation of gaming, that they will bear the grossest impertinences, and mix with the outcasts of humanity, for its gratification, as if the dice, like death, levelled all distinctions.

Observe that person, who seems to be absorbed in thought, in the midst of the hurricane around him. Reason takes the advantage of his being for a moment disengaged, and forces him to behold, in a proper light, a scene so contrary to *the œconomy of human life*, as that in which he was involved; but wait till the dice-box comes round to him, and you will see all his philosophy vanish, and his passion for gaming hurry him as destructive lengths as the most thoughtless of them all.

Every ability, every virtue that could adorn and exalt the human mind, conspired to throw the brightest lustre around his youth, and mark him as a blessing to society. Nor did he disappoint the general hope, but filled with dignity and honour, the high employments to which his merits raised him, till this pernicious passion insensibly unbent his mind, and turned his thoughts from every nobler pursuit. The falling off was most unhappy: his time, every moment of which is precious to the public, is wasted in idle dissipation, or devoted to pleasures, destructive to his fortune, which thus falls a prey to sharpers, while the industrious, honest tradesman, calls in vain for payment at his door.

Yet, even in this improvidence, the natural virtue of his heart sometimes appears, in a manner that

softens the severity of censure. Some years ago, when he filled one of the most important places of the state, in a neighbouring nation, he had notice given him, that a set of sharpers, disguised with the most delicate and specious art, had entered into a combination against him; but instead of profiting by the friendly caution, and avoiding them, he seemed to throw himself, on purpose, into the snares laid for him, till they had pillaged him of sums of money, sufficient to distress the greatest fortune.

As it was known that he had been forewarned of their schemes, his conduct was astonishing to all: but he vindicated it by saying, that the wretches had put themselves to a considerable expense, and travelled a great way to accomplish their design; if he had disappointed which, they must either have starved or robbed, perhaps from those who might not be able to bear the loss, and then have been hanged: so that he looked upon it as a charity, in a double sense, to submit to be cheated by them, and in the same manner does he still vindicate his gaming, with persons so notorious for their villanies, that it is almost infamous to speak to them.

At his left hand, you see a person with an heap of gold before him, which he dissipates with such eagerness, that he seems desirous to be poor. His father heaped up that wealth, with an avidity that was a disgrace to human nature. The groans of the distressed, the tears of the orphan and the widow, which he hoarded with his riches, now eat them like a canker; and the gold that he wrung from the hard hands of the poor, melts in the possession of his spendthrift heir, like snow before the sun. Nor was the sordidness of his heart, in abstaining from the

most necessary use of his riches, inferior to his iniquity in acquiring them. He denied himself the very necessaries of life, and literally lived in the most abject poverty, for fear of being poor. To this perverse disposition does the person you see, in a great measure, owe his inheriting his wealth; for he had an elder brother, whom the miser had always designed to be his heir, till an ill-timed act of filial piety lost him his favour.

The old man had an ailment in his leg, which, for want of proper and timely care, had grown to such a degree of malignancy, that it at length became absolutely necessary to cut it off, in order to save his life. Terrible as the apprehension of such an operation must be, the expense of it gave him still greater concern. To have it done, therefore, in the cheapest manner, he made his eldest son disguise himself in a mean dress, and take a lodging for him in a garret, in one of the obscurest corners of the town, whither he removed himself by night, and under the character of a poor tradesman, sent for a surgeon, who lived in that neighbourhood, and advertised his skill at the lowest price. His son, whose near prospect of such an immense inheritance did not efface his filial duty and affection, was shocked at such an instance of avarice, and, though he dared not contradict, was resolved to counteract it. Accordingly, when he was sent for the surgeon (for his father had not revealed his retreat to any of his servants, for obvious reasons) instead of going to the quack, as he was directed, he went to one of the most eminent surgeons of the age, and revealing the whole affair to him, prevailed on him, for a large gratification, to disguise himself, and undertake to perform the operation, for whatever trifle should be offered him; and then told his father, with an appearance of joy, that

as he was going for the advertising surgeon, he had luckily met, in an alehouse where he was directed to inquire for him, a person who had been many years a surgeon's mate on board a man of war, who he was sure would cut off his leg, not only much better, but cheaper also, as his appearance shewed that he was starving, and must be glad to take whatever he could get.

Such a lucky hit raised the old man's spirits, so that he submitted to the operation without farther concern, which was performed in so masterly a manner, that, in a fit of unwonted generosity, he gave the surgeon half a guinea, though he had bargained with him for a crown; but then he comforted himself, when he began afterwards to reflect upon his extravagance, that he could stop it out of the fees for his attendance. In the same manner as he had imposed a good surgeon upon him, did his unfashionable son supply him with all things necessary for his condition, by making a woman, in whom he could confide, bring them every day, as if from a lady of fortune, a patient of the surgeon's, to whom he had represented him as an object of charity; for, if he had had no other support but what he allowed himself, he must have perished for want of proper nourishment. When his cure was completed by this management, and he came to discharge the surgeon, after lamenting his inability to make a more suitable return, he offered him a couple of guineas; but the surgeon not thinking it necessary to carry on the deceit any longer, now the end was answered, told him that he need make no apology, for his son had already given him two hundred.—'My son, Sir! I do not understand 'you,' answered the wretch, in the most violent agitations of surprise, confusion, and rage. 'Yes, Sir,'

replied the surgeon, addressing him by his name, and telling his own, 'your son, to whom you are indebted 'for your life more ways than one; for, it was he 'that supplied you with the things which you ima- 'gined to have been sent you out of charity.'—

Shocking as this discovery was, the old miser recovered presence of mind to carry it off in an admirable manner. 'Sir,' said he, 'I have a proper 'sense of my son's duty, and of your skill in your 'profession; though you have prevented me from 'making an acknowledgment of them in the manner 'I intended: for you must not think that I have 'been deceived; I knew you all along: and I re- 'moved to this place, and took this method of con- 'cealing myself, both to avoid the trouble and im- 'pertinence of visitors and complimentary messages, 'and to make trial of my son's duty; of which I have now had a sufficient proof.'—Saying this, he took the surgeon by the hand, and accepted his offer of continuing to attend him till his wound should be quite healed, with the greater readiness, as he was paid already; but to his son he behaved in a different manner; for he directly made a new will, by which he bequeathed his immense fortune to the next brother, the person before us, leaving the other to pine out his days in poverty, on a poor annuity, *in reward for his obedience and duty* (in the very words of his will) an injustice that was farther aggravated, by his having made him relinquish the most promising hopes of rising in the army, and resign his commission, some time before, merely to attend upon him. Such a shock was almost too great for human fortitude: the injured gentleman sunk under it; happy in escaping from a world, where the highest virtues are despised, if destitute of wealth.

As for the heir, it was his good fortune to be bred at such a distance from his father, that he had no opportunity of making any observations on him, and therefore, as the miser could not carry his wealth with him out of the world, he even left it to him; though, could he have foreseen the scene before us, he would sooner have bequeathed it to charitable uses, to enrich overseers, and starve the poor, than give it to such a spendthrift.

I see your senses fail under such an extraordinary exertion, I shall therefore close this scene with observing, that the whole company may be characterized under the few I have pointed out to you. In this view of them, I chose to take the silent moment, when their business was near over: for, in the height of it, the agitation of such complicated passions would have been too horrible for representation.

CHAPTER XVIII.

Chrysal gives a farther account of his late lord. The methods by which he had been initiated in the mysteries of polite life. Some sketches of the character of his next master, who gives him to an extraordinary person.

I PROMISED to give you some account of my *late* lord. He was the son of one of the most distinguished persons of his age, who had acquired a fortune in the service of his country, sufficient to sup-

port, with proper dignity, the nobility with which his faithful zeal was rewarded by his grateful sovereign.

The youth of his son opened with such promising hopes, that it was expected he would advance, in the steps of his father, to the highest rank of a subject.—To facilitate these hopes, at his return from his travels, in which he had not only gone to see, but had also taken time to consider, the principal countries of Europe, with those of Africa and Asia, whose interests might any way affect those of his own, or whose history, illustrated thus by observation, might teach him to improve the advantages of his own country, and avoid the evils which had been the ruin of others, he was placed in the lower house of the senate, with every advantage of fortune, interest, and opinion, to support the exertion of his abilities.

He had scarce made himself known here, in his proper light, when the death of his father raised him into the upper house, where he soon established a weight that made him of real consequence to the nation, and alarmed the fears of the ministry, who, as they could not confute, resolved to corrupt him, if possible; for which end, the deepest schemes were put in practice, to relax his morals, and embarrass his fortune, as the present situation of both raised him above their attempts.

It would require uncommon virtue to resist the temptations to vice, in an age whose refinements have taken off every grossness, and almost every horror of its appearance. His regard was won, by a most delicate application to that vanity, which is too often the shadow of merit, especially in youth; the very persons who designed to change his prin-

ciples, seeming to give up theirs to the superior force of his reason.

Such artifice soon won the confidence of his unguarded heart, and inclined it to receive their opinions and advice, without farther examination: as the heat of youth and a vivid imagination assisted their designs against his fortune, the success of which was in itself a sufficient reward.

He had always expressed a dislike to *play*, nor ever gave into it, but in complaisance to company. To conquer this aversion was therefore their last labour, in which they found easier success than they could have even hoped for. The affluence of his fortune made him above apprehension of loss, and a disdain to be excelled, even in an art he disapproved, engaged him with a keenness, that soon made his advances in the art a pleasure to him.

The work was now done; and a few years of his own industry, with the assistance of his friends, and the management of his faithful steward, made him willing to enter into the pay of a ministry, which he might, in less time, have overturned.

This was his situation at that time; but some secret struggles, which I saw reason and virtue making in his heart, make me think he meditates a revolt from his infatuation, which the least liberty to his natural good sense could not fail to accomplish; an event, which the rapacity of Poundage must hasten, to his own ruin.

The person in whose possession I left the scene you have just beheld, was one of those who had been so successful in initiating my late master into all

the mysteries of pleasure. Indeed, he seemed designed by nature to extend its empire over all mankind, making it the sole object of abilities equal to the most exalted pursuits, to invent new, to improve the old methods of gratifying sense, and enforcing his precepts, by an example so keen, and a conversation so captivating, as not to be resisted. Appetites so extensive required a large support; to provide which, for fortune had so far frowned upon his birth, that he was but a younger brother, he was compelled to steal some moments from his darling pleasures, and sacrifice them to business. The interest of his family and his own abilities had raised him to the first employments in the state; but as the sole motive of his submitting to the restraint of any application, was to acquire a fund for the gratification of his pleasures, his haste to arrive at that end precipitated him into the most destructive measures, and made him ready and eager to embrace every opportunity of sacrificing, or rather selling, the interest of his country for present private gain.

The proper application of the gifts of heaven makes them a blessing. This cast of his disposition made those abilities, which, under a right direction, would have been of the highest service to himself and his country, a real prejudice to both, making him the ready and dangerous instrument of the most enormous crimes, that could promise present gratification to his passions.

In such a life, there must necessarily be many disagreeable occurrences, but they made no impression on him; for his whole soul is so devoted to pleasure, that upon the least miscarriage in business, he finds immediate relief in the return to that, which he can fly to, without any difficulty, the natural vivacity of

his temper, that makes his conversation so bewitching to others, never yielding to a second moment's vexation at any one event.

As the viper bears in herself the antidote of her poison, this dissipation of temper prevents his abilities from doing all the mischief he otherwise might, by pulling off the mask, and shewing his designs too soon for their accomplishment. The very persons, who would gladly avail themselves of the venality, not daring to trust to the inconstancy of his disposition; so that he soon lost his greatest power of doing evil, otherwise than by opposing, and impeding the measures of those, whose successful honesty disappointed his designs, and shewed the danger of them in its proper light.

You will not imagine, that my stay could be long in his possession. He that very day gave me to an author, for throwing dirt on the characters of those who had detected and defeated his schemes of leading his country into ruin.

CHAPTER XIX.

The history and character of Chrysal's new master.—His adventures at a coffee-house. The fun of a modern genius retorted upon himself, by the grave rebuke of a testy veteran.

MY new master was a votary of Apollo, in the double capacity of physic and letters: for, the former not affording scope enough for his genius, he usually dedicated his leisure hours to the gentler entertainments of the latter, through the extensive circle of which he had occasionally ran; there not being a branch in the wide world of science which had not felt his pruning: the lowest rudiments of the most vulgar arts being, in his opinion, no more beneath the philosophic pen, than the most abstruse heights of speculation.

It must be owned, that, in such a latitude of study, he often was obliged to prostitute his labours; but for this he had the solid consolation, that his gain generally rose in proportion as his subject sunk, the caprice of the world paying best, that is, buying most eagerly, what it affected to decry most. Nor is this to be wondered at, a loose tale, or a receipt for cooking a new dish, being better adapted to general taste, than a moral essay, or metaphysical speculation.

From his patron's levee, my master went directly home, and, undressing into his cap and slippers, ascended into his study, and took a meditative turn or two, revolving in his mind the many grievances that called upon him for redress, from the success of that morning.

At length bursting into a rapture, he cried, 'I'll 'think no more! Be the wants of yesterday forgot! 'those of to-morrow will come too soon, without the 'anticipation of thought! I cannot pay all I owe! I 'cannot provide all I want! Hence, then, vain care! 'I'll depend on fortune, and myself, for a greater 'supply another day, and indulge my genius with the 'present.—Big with this heroic resolution, he gave orders for dinner, and then, sending for his best suit home, he dressed himself in all his pride, and went to a coffee-house to look at the papers.

The pleasure of *my* company had given such a flow to his spirits, naturally high, that he soon drew the attention of the coffee-room, the greater part of the company gathering in a circle round him, to hear his remarks on the publications of the day, which he threw out with the confidence of one, who thought his opinion the established standard of all writing; and at the same time, with a sprightliness that made his very impudence and absurdity entertaining.

While he was thus running on, in the torrent of harangue, a *veteran*, whose only employment, for many years, was talking over the actions of his youth, and comparing them to the mistakes and losses of the present times, no longer able to contain his rage, at having his audience drawn from him, in the midst of his daily tale, rose up with an execration that shook the room, and called for his cloak and cane. 'This

'is not to be borne,' exclaimed he. 'Here, waiter, 'take for my coffee! I shall stay in such a place no 'longer: this is the land of freedom, forsooth! that 'a man must be disturbed in his discourse, and not 'have liberty to speak where he spends his money? 'Had I but the command here, I'd settle other 'orders; every prating puppy should not presume to 'interrupt his betters: things are like to go well with 'us, when matters of the highest consequence can be 'broken in upon by noise and nonsense. This is 'freedom with a vengeance.'

The look and accent with which these words were pronounced, were too terrible for my master to encounter; both nature and experience having given him so lively an apprehension of danger, that his readiest presence of mind was not always able to conceal it. He was, therefore, cut short at once, and could scarce muster spirits to throw a wink at some of those about him, as the *man of war* looked another way.

But the triumph was not so absolute over all the company, one of whom, resolving to have some *fun*, cries out, 'Pray, doctor, proceed; you are just in 'the most interesting part of your story: the colonel 'could not mean to interrupt you; he is too fond of 'telling his own story to give another such pain: 'go on, you should not be frighted at a flash in the 'pan.'

'Frighted indeed,' replied the doctor, gathering courage when he saw himself supported, 'at what, I 'wonder! at the sight of what old age can sink to; 'no, no, I am not so easily frighted! I leave that 'to your antiquated heroes, the exploits of whose 'youth have exhausted their courage: I mean no

'offence; but to go on, as I was saying, *the discovery of the sleep of plants accounts in the clearest* 'manner'—'Hold, doctor,' cries the other, 'that was 'not *as you were saying*, you were telling us of the 'nobleman, who caught his coachman in bed with 'his lady, one morning, when he came home, sooner 'than usual from the tavern; pray how did she bring 'herself off?'

'Oh! was that it,' replied the doctor, 'faith I 'had forgot; the fury of Mars had like to have made 'a gap in the annals of Venus: ha! ha! ha! why 'she made nothing of it, but laughing in his face, 'most heroically, *tit for tat*, my dear, is but fair 'play,' said she, 'while I say nothing at your staying 'out night after night with *Kitty*, you cannot in 'conscience blame my comforting myself a little with 'John.'

The colonel stood all this while convulsed with rage, too big for utterance: but the universal laugh, that followed the doctor's last words, rousing him, he advanced to him, 'Whom do you dare to laugh 'at, *poltroon*?' says he, taking him by the nose, 'whose courage is exhausted? But you are beneath 'my notice or resentment, farther than this:' then spitting full in his face, he turned to the gentleman who had set the doctor on, and who began now not to like the joke any farther, 'But, for you, Sir! you 'perhaps may be a gentleman, worth calling to a 'further account! Will you please to walk up 'stairs with me, and let me know what you mean by 'a flash in the pan?'

The ceremonies of attending him, on such an expedition, would not have been much more agreeable to this gentleman than to my master, but he had

more command of his fear, and was well used to bring himself off with a joke. 'Sir,' says he, 'you 'need not give yourself the trouble of going up stairs, 'for what I can as well do here! By bidding the 'doctor not be frighted, I meant at the circumstance 'of his own story, for just as you interrupted him, 'he had said, the lord snapped a pistol at his lady, 'which had flashed in the pan! That was all, Sir! 'I could never mean it to offend you, or shew a 'doubt of your courage, which I have heard you re- 'late so many surprising instances of, so often, and 'always so invariably alike, that they must be true.'

'Sir! Sir! have a care,' replied the colonel, 'I 'do not desire to be troubled with such a gentleman 'as I perceive you are! But let me tell you, Sir, 'that I have seen a man's face broke before now, 'for wearing such a sneer! As to the stories I tell, 'I am satisfied they will be of no service to you, nor 'raise the least emulation in a man who can stay 'lounging about town, when his country has occa- 'sion for him. I was younger than you when I 'went a volunteer with Lord Cutts, under the Duke 'of Marlborough; nor was I urged by want; I had 'a good estate, Sir, sufficient to supply me with what 'you call the pleasures of life, if I could have 'thought any thing a pleasure that was not attended 'with honour. Sir, I lost this hand at Blenheim, 'and this leg at Malplaquet! But why do I tell 'you! you will preserve your hands to take snuff; 'and your legs to walk the park, the proper scene of 'your campaigns.'—With which words the doughty hero marched away to his chariot.

Though this lecture was rather too grave for the taste of the person to whom it was addressed, it gave great pleasure to the unconcerned part of the com-

pany, and to none more than my master, who had wiped his face, and began to come to himself as soon as he saw the danger directed another way.

Before the gentleman could speak, the doctor came up to him, and said, 'I am sorry, Sir, that 'you should have drawn this storm upon yourself, 'upon my account! But I bore the worst of it! 'You heard but the whistling of the winds, the 'shower fell on me! 'Tis well though, that what 'such dotards do is not esteemed an affront!'—'An 'affront, Sir,' replied the other, 'I do not under-'stand you! I hope you do not insinuate, that there 'was any affront offered to me, or that I was in the 'least concerned at what was said, only to you!'—'Not at all, Sir,' returned the doctor, 'not at all, 'Sir! the colonel's discourse was all directed to me, 'to be sure; and I hope to profit by it, thus far, that 'I will never interrupt him again!' And with these words he left his former friend the field, not caring to enter into any farther altercation with him, for fear he might take it into his head to vindicate his character on *him*, as *he knew his man*.

Such slight rebuffs made not a moment's impression on the temper of my master: he was used to, and made nothing of them! A good dinner, and a bottle of wine, sent him in the evening, in a critical enthusiasm, to the theatre, where all action fell short of the sublimity of his conception, all expression, of the warmth of his feeling, as he fully explained to every company in the coffee-house, while he sat at public supper, when the play was done.

CHAPTER XX.

Some farther account of Chrysal's master. His conversation and engagements with two booksellers. Some of the secrets of the trade. Chrysal changes his service.

EXTENSIVE as these scenes were, they shewed not my master in his proper light. His peculiar sphere was his study, where the inconsistency of his work, shewed the *chaos* in the brain, from whence they sprung. *Chaos* did I say! *Chaos* is order to the confusion there. For surely the discordant seeds of such ill matched things were never jumbled together before. An auctioneer's library is a regular system, in comparison to his head. Such an heap has neither beginning nor end. No fixed point to commence a description from. I shall therefore wave such an attempt, and only strive to convey some idea of it, from its effects.

At five the next morning he arose to his labours, the first of which was to consider what he should begin the day with, such was the multitude he had in hand. But what reason could not determine, chance must, and he took them as they happened to lie, *panegyric*, *libel*, *physic*, *divinity*, *cookery*, *criticism*, *politics*, *ballads*, *botany*, &c. &c. &c. In all of which he indefatigably worked the task of the day, changing his subject with as little concern as he did

W. Read Sc.
ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.
The Author in his Study

his paper: and though such rambling prevented his ever getting deeper than the surface of any subject, yet he shewed the extent and volubility of his capacity, and that it wanted only regular application to any science, to be eminent in it.

As soon as he had finished and the *devils* had carried away his labours, he was just descending to go out, when a bookseller came to pay him a visit. After much ceremony on one side, and little civility on the other, Mr. Vellum thus accosted my master: 'Well, Sir, I see there is no dependence on the word 'of an author! I thought I was to have the answer 'to yesterday's pamphlet last night: somebody else 'will do it, and then I shall be finely off.'

'Upon my honour, Sir,' replied my master, 'I assure you I should have done it, but some business,' —'What business can you have, that should interfere a moment with your engagements with me?'— 'Dear Mr. Vellum, do but hear me! There is a noble 'lord going to be divorced for impotence; I just got 'a hint of the matter, the night before last, and so 'waited upon his lordship's gentleman yesterday 'morning, with whom I had a particular intimacy, 'having served him in my profession more than once; 'and from him I have learned the whole story, and 'now leave me to set it out! I'll engage to make a 'noble eighteen-penny worth of it, at least by to-'morrow morning.'—'Why, there may be something 'in that; but in the mean time you should not let 'other matters cool!'—'Never fear, pray how did 'yesterday's pamphlet do?'—'Why, tolerably well; 'but the scandal was so gross, that I was almost 'afraid.'—'Aye, aye, never fear me for an home cut; 'never fear me!'—'But I hear nothing of the exer-'citations!'—'No; *I sent* away the sheet above an

'hour ago!'—'Then there's that book you promised 'to re-write; some one else will do it, and prevent 'you.'—'Never fear, I have just laid down a scale 'for the style; besides, I have altered the title 'already, and that you know is the principal thing.' —'That is right! Now you speak of titles, I want 'half a dozen directly! this very day, if possible!'— 'It is rather too late now, but where are the books?' —'In the lumber garret, where they have lain these 'seven years.'—'That's well; they are forgot by this.' —'Forgot! why they were never known! The au- 'thor was a man of fortune, who printed them at his 'own expence, but I prevented the sale, and so had 'them for the publishing! Ha! ha! ha! beside a 'good consideration for buying up at a double price 'what I had (*not*) sold of them; so that it was not a 'bad job; and now he is dead, they may safely come 'out under new titles! It will be too great a delay 'to wait to see them, but here are the old titles, 'which I suppose may do,—'Why, aye; they may 'do; but I cannot possibly write them this evening; 'you know I must answer that pamphlet I wrote last 'week, before it is forgot; I have an answer ready, 'that will make a noise; I expect it will raise a cu- 'riosity that will sell another edition of the pamphlet. 'I left openings for such retorts upon the characters 'I praised in that, and have such pieces of secret 'history to hit them off with, that I'll engage for the 'success.'—'Aye, secret history, and stories of fa- 'miliar misfortunes, and such like, may do something. 'But I had like to have forgot the main business of 'my coming. There is an account of the death of 'an eminent divine, this morning: could we not 'vamp up a volume or two of sermons for him, think 'you? He was suspected of heresy and atheism, and 'you know, that would make any thing in his name 'go off.'—'Egad, a good thought! and particularly

'lucky at this time: for, as I have been engaged in 'divinity lately, I know the weak sides of the ques- 'tion, and a little infidelity will be a refreshment 'to me. It shall be done! the sermons shall be 'ready without delay! Have you not got some by 'you that did not go off: let me have one of each, 'and I'll interline them to save time; but will you 'publish them yourself? I thought you had given up 'sermons!'—'Myself! no! no! I'll send them into 'Mr. Vamp. I'll reserve the confutation of them to 'to myself!'—'Egad, another good thought; the 'confutation will do better! and I'll take care to 'make it a smart one, and play the devil with the 'author; ha ha, ha. But, Mr. Vellum, your coming 'here this morning prevented my waiting on you: it 'is a great while since you promised to settle with me. 'You should consider, Sir'—'What pray, good Sir, 'should I consider? that I have supported you!'— 'Supported me, Mr. Vellum! Sir, I have a profes- 'sion.'—'I know you have, Mr. Doctor; a profes- 'sion indeed, in which his majesty's subjects may 'bless God that nine in ten of you would starve, if 'they had no other way of getting bread, beside that.' —'Mr. Vellum, you know this way of talking signi- 'fies nothing. It is a long time since we have settled 'any account, and there are a great many articles! 'Let me see: aye, here they are! and a long list it 'is! *Nineteen pamphlets*, with *answers* to *fourteen* 'of them; *nine rapes*, *six murders*, *five fast* and '*four funeral sermons*, *thirty-six essays*, *twenty-* '*two titles*, *four quarto volumes re-writ*, *seventeen* '*wills*, *twenty-four*'—'Go on, Sir, go on! but when 'you have done, look at *this*, and talk to me of 'an account; your bond for fifteen pounds, which 'is due these two years; and it is very likely, to be sure, that you should leave it out-standing so long, if you had any account to set off against it! But I

'am glad I know you; and since you talk of accounts, 'observe that I demand my money, due on this bond, 'which I will have, and, when you have paid that, 'it will be time enough for me to settle accounts with 'you; so, Sir, your servant.'—'Mr. Vellum, good 'Mr. Vellum, do not be so hasty! I did not mean to 'give you offence.'—'Accounts indeed! have I not 'supplied you with paper above the weekly allow-'ance we agreed for, and yet you will talk to me!' —'Mr. Vellum, I may be in the wrong; let matters 'stand as they are: but you have not told me what 'size you would have this affair of the divorce, that 'I mentioned to you just now.'—'There it is now; 'that is your way always; you know my easy tem-'per, and that you can bring me down when you 'please: why, if the story will bear much printing, 'and the circumstances are very strong and plain, I 'believe you may draw it out to two shillings; and 'to encourage you, and shew you that I mean gene-'rously by you, when you have finished *that*, and 'the *answer*, and the *sermons*, and the *confutations*, 'and the *titles*, and the *exercitations*, I will give you 'up your bond, and then we will begin an account on 'plain even terms. But I am in haste, I have three 'or four other gentlemen to call upon; I shall depend 'upon your promise, and so good morning.'—'Good 'morning to you, good Mr. Vellum. Damned, im-'posing, grinding scoundrel! but I'll be quit with 'you, for all your tricks,' said the Doctor, as soon as Mr. Vellum was out of the room, 'and teach 'such stupid rascals to tempt outwitting men of 'genius.'

When I considered the nature and importance of my master's demand, I could not but wonder at the ease with which he took a denial, and the joy he ex-pressed at Mr. Vellum's departure; but the mystery

was soon cleared up, by the arrival of Mr. Pamphlet, another of the trade, almost the very moment Vellum went down stairs, and whom, I saw by his reception, my master expected.

If I was before shocked at the cruelty with which I thought Vellum treated my master, I was not less so, at the part *he* acted with Pamphlet, with whom he bargained over again for the very same *ware* which he before promised to Vellum, and flattered him with an assurance of having his business done, that is, the answers and re-writing, before Vellum possibly could, for they were mortal enemies.

The discourse between these was much the same as the former, only it was concluded in a different manner; Pamphlet giving my master a couple of pieces, to keep him in mind of his engagement.

I was utterly at a loss to think how he meant to act between these two; when he put an end to my doubts by this soliloquy. 'So, now I have dis-'patched you two, the day is my own; keep my en-'gagements! I will, with both alike. Let me see, 'there is nothing in it, but a little trouble of writing; 'I can divide the hits between both answers, accord-'ing to the opens I have left on purpose, and so 'send them to both at the same time; only to divide 'the alterations in my scale of style, and make a 'second title, and so it is done. This method that I 'have found, of using a feigned name, makes it all 'easy. Well, let those who were born to fortunes, 'spend them in sloth and ignorance, I have an es-'tate in myself, that can never be exhausted. I am 'obliged to nature only, for my abilities, and carry 'the fountain of honour and fortune in the fluency of 'my genius.'

He then descended from his aerial citadel, and going out to *visit* his patients, *changed* me at a coffee-house, where I was immediately borrowed at the bar by an officer, who was going to dine with the general, and wanted money to give his servants.

CHAPTER XXI.

Chrysal enters into the service of the gentleman of a general. Gratitude in high and low life. The modern way of rising in the world, and the happiness of dependance. Influence of Chrysal's master, with his curious manner of supporting it.

YOU may judge that my stay with this owner was but short; he gave me directly to the general's *gentleman*, with a letter to be presented to his excellency next morning, as he could not find courage to speak to him in person.

The case of this person, though not uncommon among men, I own affected me. He was the son of an officer of distinguished merit, the services of whose life had, in the eightieth year of it, been rewarded with the command of a regiment, and the hopes of his son crowned with a pair of colours; which, on the death of his father, in six months after his elevation, he found to be his whole inheritance; the fees of office, and the equipage for his new rank, having exhausted all the savings of the old man's subaltern frugality. The most exemplary duty, in five warm

campaigns, had advanced the son to the rank of a lieutenant, when the exaltation of the person to whom he now applied, raised his hopes to a company, which was vacant in the regiment, and his right by seniority; for such was his ignorance of mankind, that he built sanguine expectations on the very reasons that should have deprived him of any, *the obligations of the persons to whom he applied, to his father*, who had taken him up, the poor friendless orphan of an ensign, educated him at his own expense, procured him his first commission, and afterwards lent him the money with which he had purchased his company: a debt which the son was weak enough to expect a friendship from, though it, and much more, had long since been cleared at play.

But, though the character of the son, and the general's known intimacy with the father, in a manner obliged him to promise him his friendship, yet nothing was farther from his thoughts than ever to do him any real service; as he imagined that would be acknowledging the obligations which his very attendance seemed to upbraid him with: a dinner now and then being the only favour he ever had, or ever meant, to give him. You may, perhaps, have experienced the misery of a dependant's dining at the table of his patron, where the tortures of Tantalus are aggravated by anxiety of giving offence. I shall therefore hasten over this, and the other scenes of that evening, which were but the common occurrences of military greatness, and ended in a deep debauch, as soon as all but the *chosen few* had retired, to come to the conclusion of my late master's story, in which my present bore a considerable part.

As soon as the general had slept off the fumes of his wine, and awoke next morning, my master's hour

of influence arrived, which he never failed to improve. After a prelude of coughing and spitting, the scene opened thus: 'Who's there? William!' —'Sir.'—'William, was not I very drunk last 'night! my head aches most confoundedly.'—'Your 'excellency was a little cut, but you broke up much 'the strongest of the company.'—'Aye, I wonder at 'that, I spend myself with talking, when I begin to 'go, and that helps a man on damnably: that story 'of the battle, where I was taken prisoner, is a bot-'tle in my way always.'—'That foreign gentleman, 'who never speaks a word, has a great advantage 'then.'—'Aye, so he has; but he is a damned ho-'nest fellow, and a very good companion; he always 'fills a bumper, and never speaks a word.—But my 'head.'—'Perhaps your excellency had better take 'something.'—'No, I have taken too much already: 'though that's right; give me a glass of the old ge-'neva; I am to go to council to-day, and must 'settle my head. Aye, that will do, I am much 'better now; there is nothing like a hair of the old 'dog.'

This conversation continued till he was seated to breakfast, when my master turned to a new topic. 'I was very sorry,' said he, 'that your excellency 'happened to sit in last night, as Mrs. Motherly was 'to call.'—'Why, that's true; William, I did not 'think of one engagement when I made the other; 'and, when, she called me out, I was not in cue; I 'was too far gone. We old fellows are not spar-'rows! the spirit is often willing, when the flesh is 'weak; ha ha, ha.'—'Your excellency is pleased to 'be merry, but, to my thinking, the youngest fellow 'of the age has not more vigour.'—'Aye, William 'do you think so, indeed? But why do you think so, 'William?'—'Because your excellency always

'chooses such green things: now I should think a 'ripe woman would be better; I am sure she would 'give less trouble.'—'Ha, ha ha, why that's your 'taste; but youth is mine, and while I have powers, 'and I do not think mine quite gone yet, I will please 'my taste. But what had Mrs. Motherly last night?' 'A very fine girl as your excellency could wish to 'see.' 'How old?'—'About sixteen.'—'Psha, mel-'low pears! I loath such trash.'—'But Mrs. Mo-'therly said she could swear she was untouched. 'She came from the country but yesterday, a relation 'of her own: she poor thing knew nothing of the 'matter, and thought she came to be hired for a 'laundry maid.'—'Why, that is something, but I 'wish she were younger.'—'If your excellency 'pleases but to wait a little, I have one in my eye, 'that will suit your taste exactly; a sweeter child is 'not in all England.'—'Aye, good William,' spit-ting once or twice, and wriggling in his chair, 'Aye, 'that is something, but how old?'—'Just ten, and 'finely grown.'—'Right, the right age. That's 'true! I'll speak this very day for that place for 'your brother. Tell him to come to-morrow: I will 'not be refused.'—'We are both obliged to your 'excellency for your favours.'—'But when shall I 'see this girl? Give Motherly some excuse with her 'ripe fruit. Sixteen! sixty! psha!'—'Sir, I shall 'go about it this very evening.—A letter from cap-'tain Standard; will your excellency please to read 'it?'—'Damn him and his letter; throw it into the 'fire! What would the unreasonable scoundrel 'have? Did I not give him his dinner yesterday? 'Has he not been introduced to good company at 'my table? If he had any industry or spirit, with 'these advantages he would have learned to play, 'and made his fortune, as others do. Since he grows 'troublesome on encouragement, I'll starve him into

'better manners. Bid the porter strike him off the 'dinner list.'—'I beg your excellency's pardon, for 'mentioning him; but the manner I have heard you 'talk to him made me imagine you really did design 'to provide for him; and he says there is a vacancy 'in the regiment just now.'—'Damn his impudence! 'a vacancy indeed! I shall never think there is a 'good one, till he makes it at Tyburn.'

'I beg your excellency's pardon: I shall never 'mention him more. Would you have me go about 'the child this evening? It is a little angel to be sure,' —'This moment if you think you can succeed.'—'I 'shall try at any rate: but there is one obstacle.'— 'What is that? You know I never grudge money on 'these occasions. How much will do?'—'That is 'not the difficulty here; money will not do, and I 'hardly know what will.'—'Money not do! why 'what the devil can it be, that money will not do?' —'I scarce know how to mention it to your excel- 'lency, but the little cherub is niece to captain 'Standard, his sister's daughter, and while he is in 'the way, there will be no possibility of getting at 'her.'—'Is that all? Then he shall join the regi- 'ment to-morrow.'—'But then he will leave such an 'impression of your unkindness upon his sister, if 'there is nothing done for him, after waiting so long, 'that it will be impossible for any person belonging 'to you to gain access.'

'What would you have me do? I never will bear 'to have the fellow get a company in my regiment: 'that would be acknowledging the obligations he has 'the impudence to say I received from his father; I 'never will bear it.'—'I beg your excellency's par- 'don; I did not presume to point out any such thing; 'and indeed, the possession of such a *baby* (though

'my eyes never beheld her fellow) is not worth giving 'yourself so much trouble about; she is quite too 'too young, though so well grown.'—'You say she 'is but just ten! and such a beauty?'—'I wish your 'excellency could but see her, for I am unable to 'describe her.'—'But cannot some way be found 'out, beside fixing this fellow under my nose?'— 'That was just what I was going to take the liberty 'of hinting to your excellency. There are several 'gentlemen of fortune, in the troops just ordered to 'America, who have no liking to the voyage. Now 'I think, with submission, that you would oblige 'some of them, with an exchange into your regiment, 'and let captain Standard go in his place. And this 'will oblige him too; for I have often heard him 'wish to go there, in hopes of rising, when they come 'into action.'—'A good thought, and so I will. Let 'the fellow go to America and get scalped: his hot 'head wants to be cooled: such poor wretches as 'he are just fit to be transported there. Tell him to 'prepare directly! I long to be rid of him. But 'when shall I see the dear little creature?'

'In twenty-four hours after he is gone, I'll under-'take to have her eating sugar-plumbs, and sobbing 'in your bosom. It cannot possibly be sooner, for 'you know the captain's spirit, and that he would 'cut the throat of a prince, who should dishonour his 'family, as he calls it.'—'Aye, damn his spirit, that 'is true; that is what has kept me civil to the fellow 'so long: I know he has all the romantic madness 'about honour, and such stuff, that made his fool of 'a father live and die a beggar.'

By this time his excellency was dressed to go to council, for which another dram settled his head.

I *see* your surprise at the brutal behaviour of the master, and the infamous designs of the man. The former is beyond aggravation; but the latter were only an honest artifice in favour of his friend, who had no such niece in the world.

CHAPTER XXII.

The history of Mr. William. Some odd circumstances in his conduct accounted for. By a progression equally polite and frugal. Chrysal comes from his possession into that of a celebrated female.

WILLIAM was a son of the regiment, born of one of the general wives that followed it. He was about the same age with Standard, who had taken such a liking to him when they were boys, that he shared his allowance with him, gave him his old clothes, and taught him what he had learned at school. A natural acuteness of genius improved these advantages so well, that William could read and write enough for a gentleman, dance, fence, and scrape on the violin, before his friend's power of serving him was put an end to, by the death of his father, and his spirit and appetites were too great to accept of his offer, of the best support an ensign could spare him, to maintain him as a cadet, till his merit should get him a commission. But, though, he would not accept, he did not forget the offer, nor make his obligations a cause of hatred, now that it was in his power to make some

return; a way of thinking that proved the meanness of his birth; for, quitting the barren paths of military honour, he had turned his genius to the more thriving profession of a footman; through the various ascents of which he had risen to his present rank of his excellency's gentleman; in which he had the unfashionable gratitude to return the favours of his former benefactor in the above manner, which his experience and knowledge of his master's temper convinced him to be the only one he could hope to succeed in. As to his promise about the child, he was in no pain about that, there being no person who could contradict whatever excuse he should please to give.

There is one circumstance, which I see puzzles you, in the character of this man, and that is his taking *me* from his friend, when he must be sensible how badly he could spare such a sum. But you must consider the power of nature when strengthened by habit.

From his mother, William had inherited venality, which the bribery of vails, in his present profession, had confirmed beyond all possibility of correction; so that it was no more in his power to refuse a guinea when offered to him, than to change his stature or complexion. An attention to this observation would take off the wonder, and ease the world from the trouble of the exclamations that are daily made against the rapacity of persons in office; for as such are generally taken from the class of William, it cannot be expected but they must act from the same natural principle with him.

I *see* the depravity of human nature, when stripped of disguise and ornament, affects your unexperienced

heart too strongly. But consider that *we* see things as they really are, and to represent them otherwise to you would invert the design of my mission, and confirm, rather than remove, the prejudices that lead astray the mind of man.

However, this consolation I can give you, that the vices I have already drawn, and may hereafter draw, to your view, are not particular to this age or country: they are the weeds which, in every age and clime, have always, and always will over-run the human heart.

Nor is it just to call them vices (though, in compliance with the language of men, I do call them so) which *perhaps* are but * necessary parts of this universal system; and though in a particular instance, and viewed by themselves, they may appear deformed, yet when thrown into the general representation of things, they may have their beauty and use, if only to diversify the scene: and, with respect to men in particular, be as † advantageous to the community as they are prejudicial to individuals.

But to return to my master William. Beside the advantages of education, he had such from nature, that he was not only the most accomplished *gentleman*, but also the handsomest fellow of his time; an happiness, of which he availed himself so well in the *polite* world, that he was the favourite of all the *compliant* fair, who shared with him the pleasures they only suffered from his superiors for hire.

* From hence it should seem, the hint of a late treatise on the Origin of Evil, was borrowed, or else dictated by the same spirit.

† Fable of the bees.

Of this I saw sufficient proof, that very evening, when he went to an assignation with the most celebrated courtesan of the age, who, sacrificing avarice to pleasure, gave orders to be denied to every body, and shut herself up with him, to give a loose to joy for the evening.

This was a scene too sensual for a spirit to describe; I shall therefore only say, that their fatigue and waste of spirits were recruited with the highest delicacies and richest wines, and the pauses of joy enlivened with the recital of the adventures of their professions, heightened with the most poignant ridicule of those whose folly was *their* fortune.

Before satiety could pall their pleasures, time summoned them to business. The fair to prepare for the reception of her *friend;* and *my* master to wait on *his;* when, to conclude the evening with proper gallantry, he presented me to the maid at the door.

I was a good deal surprised, at being received with less emotion by the portress of Venus than I had ever found before; the sight of me having always raised joy. But this was soon explained, when, on returning to her mistress, she threw me on the table, and received a shilling in exchange. An instance of that methodical economy, which by many savings makes up for one large expense, and exacts profit even from pleasure.

The joy of the mistress seemed to make amends to my vanity for the indifference of her maid, and promised me the full possession of her heart; but I soon found myself mistaken, and that her love for me was only while I was the property of another; for no sooner did I become her own, than she threw me

carelessly into her purse, and turned her thoughts immediately to the acquisition of more. But, though I lost the greatest part of my power over her, by coming into her possession, I still found ample room in her heart for my abode.

The apartments were scarce got in order, and my mistress new dressed, when her *friend* appeared, to whom she flew with all the appearance of rapture. But, however he might be deceived, the difference was plain to me, between the joyless caresses she sold to him, and the ecstasy she shared with my late master, the glow of whose kisses yet reeked upon her lips. Nor was this strange: the ardour of her lover met her half way, and communicated as much fire as it received: but with her *keeper* the case was quite otherwise; all the advances were to come from her; all her caresses were a duty; nor were the tenderest she could bestow able to warm him to the least return.

You wonder that a person in such circumstances should be at the trouble and expense of *keeping* a mistress, whose extravagance was to be equalled only by her insolence. But this is only a small instance of the tyranny of fashion: and how will your astonishment be increased, when I tell you, that this very man, in the prime of life, was remarkable for the coolness of his constitution, and now, in its decline, was married to a beautiful young lady, whose resentment at his conjugal neglect rose so high, as to charge it to inability.

Whether this was really the case, and that he *kept* my mistress to hide it, as a failing tradesman sets up a coach, or whether the passion remained, but so feebly supported, as to require the lascivious stan-

disinments of a prostitute, I cannot determine, as I never was in his possession to take a view of his heart.

CHAPTER XXIII.

The manner in which Chrysal's new mistress received and took care of her friend. How she employed herself while he was asleep. Her management of him next morning.

IT was about two in the morning, when my mistress received him, drunk and stupified with play, at which he had lost deeply that night. On his coming into her room, he threw himself into a chair, without saying a word, or shewing the least sensibility of her caresses; where after some time he fell fast asleep, which my mistress no sooner perceived, than calling her maid, to undress and roll him into bed, 'Hese, 'Jane,' said she, 'take my place by this heap of 'mortality. I'll step to —— street; perhaps the 'company may not be all gone. Never fear, I'll en-'sure you from a rape! He wants nothing in a bed-'fellow but to keep him warm, and you may do that, 'while I pass my night better than in nursing his in-'firmities: I'll be home before he stirs.'

Jane obeyed her mistress, who slipped into a chair, and went away directly to a house, where she used to piddle away her leisure hours with any chance customers, rather than be idle.

About five ended this scene, in the rites of which my mistress bore a distinguished part. I shall not attempt to describe these mysteries: they were too gross for my relation, as well as your conception, in your present mortified habit. She then returned home, and laying her *pure* body in her maid's place, beside her *friend*, who had not stirred yet, her fatigues soon threw her into a sleep, as sound as his.

It was noon before these fond lovers awoke: the first was my mistress, who, enraged that any thing which bore the name of a man, should shew so little sensibility of her charms, resolved to tease him with endearments, which, as he was seldom in a humour to return in kind, he never failed to pay for in a more substantial manner.

When she had awoke him with her toying, the *syren* thus began her song: 'How can my dearest 'sleep so long, when his little girl lies languishing 'by his side? O turn, and let me lay my head on 'that dear bosom.'—'Ha! what is it o'clock?' replied the lover, yawning, and rubbing his eyes.—'Alas, I know not! I have told so many tedious 'hours, that I have forgot them: but what is time to 'us, who only live to love?'—'Past twelve! I 'must be gone! Some business.'—'Business! 'Leave that for duller souls, who have no taste for 'pleasure: can you leave love and me for business!' —'I am sorry I happened to oversleep myself, my 'dear; I believe I was bewitched to drink so much: 'but we'll make it up another time.'—'So you say 'always; but that other time will never come: but I 'will not be served so; I am flesh and blood, what-'ever other people may be; and you yourself know, 'it is not for want of friends I keep myself up, thus 'like a nun, for you; and all, I do not know for

'what!' 'Is the girl mad! Do not I give you 'every thing you want, every thing you desire?'— 'No, nor any thing I desire! I desire now—So you 'will get up and leave me: I will not be used thus: 'you have got some other woman: but I here give 'you a fair warning, that I will be even with you! 'Sir George was here yesterday, and so was the 'young lord—but I would not see either of them: 'and I am well requited now: but I know where 'to send to them; I will not be made a fool of every 'way, for nothing; and so you may *sleep* where you 'please, I care not.'—'Come, my dear, let us not 'fall out for nothing; you have not shewn me the 'diamond ear-rings you got last week.'—'No, my 'dear, they are not come home.'—'I thought you 'told me they were finished when I gave you the 'money to pay for them.'—'They were so; but 'when he brought them home, I did not like them. 'The jeweller told me they were not so fine as those 'he made for your lady, some time ago; so I sent 'them back, and ordered him to make me a pair that 'should be as good as her's at least.'—'Not good 'enough, child! Were they not to cost one hun- 'dred and fifty pounds?'—'And what is a hundred 'and fifty pounds?—Sir Richard gave his girl a pair 'that cost five hundred pounds; but if you think these 'are too dear, you are not obliged to pay for them: 'there is another, who will be glad to do it.'—'And 'pray what are these fine ones to cost?'—'Why— 'only—but kiss me first—only two hundred pounds; 'but then I have bespoke a necklace with them.'— 'Zounds, a diamond necklace!'—'And what mighty 'matter is a diamond necklace? pray has not your '*wife* one? But I see how it is; you think any thing 'good enough for me; and nothing good enough for 'her: but every one does not think so: I am not at 'a loss.'—'Well, you saucy little minx; and what

'do they come to?'—'Another kiss, and I'll tell 'you:—why, don't frown, or I won't tell you at all; '—only five hundred pounds.' 'Five hundred devils; that's more than my wife's cost by one hun'dred pounds.' 'And do not you love me a hun'dred times better than your wife? I have given up 'thousands for you. But, as I said before, you need 'not pay for them, if you do not choose it; there are 'others who will: I see I am slighted; and I de'serve it, for slighting so many good offers: but I 'will not always be a fool!' 'Well, my dear, for 'this one time I will humour you: give me the pen 'and ink: but you must not expect that I shall ever 'gratify your extravagance so far again.' 'I thank 'you, my lord; I shall not trouble you again this 'great while. But what is this? Three hundred 'and fifty pounds! You have made a mistake, my 'lord; I told you five hundred pounds.' 'Well, 'child, did not I give you a hundred and fifty, to pay 'for the other pair?' 'Yes, my lord; but that was 'not to pay for this pair though, you know, these are 'dearer.' 'But, that and this will.' 'I am afraid 'not.' 'How so, child; do not one hundred and 'fifty, and three hundred and fifty, make five hun'dred?' 'Indeed, I am a poor accountant; but I 'know it will not do.' 'No? why so? I do not 'understand you.' 'I'll kiss you first, and then I'll 'tell you.' 'Psha; cease fooling;—I am in haste; 'I must go to court; and have scarce time to dress; 'where is the hundred and fifty pounds?' 'There.' (Kissing him.) 'Where?' 'Gone, as that kiss is; 'all gone, and only the relish left behind, to give an 'appetite for more.' 'Infernal jade!' (Aside.)—'What do you say, my lord?' 'That I cannot, will 'not bear such extravagance.' 'I am glad I know 'your mind, my lord: then if you do not, somebody 'else will, who will not make such a stir about tri-

'flies.' 'Well, give me that bill.' 'No, thank you, 'my dear.' 'Why so?' 'For fear you should be 'a bold boy, and not return it. If you please to give 'me the other hundred and fifty pounds, I'll get the 'necklace and ear-rings, if not, this will serve for 'some other use.' 'Damnation! And then I must 'give it to her all over again.' (Aside.) 'Well, my 'lord; you said you were in haste, and so am I—.' 'Give me the pen and ink: there it is, you little ter- 'magant: but once more let me caution you against 'such extravagance for the future.' 'And once 'more, let me tell you, my lord, not to give yourself 'such airs: extravagance! They who want deli- 'cacies must pay for them; and if you think the 'price too dear, there are more customers in the 'market; and so, my lord, like it, or like it not, I 'will be supported: and more than that, what I 'want in pleasure, shall be made up in profit: let 'wives save, who may be the better for the savings, 'our business is to make hay while the sun shines.' —'Come, my dear; let us have no disputes; you 'have the money now; next time we will clear off 'the other score: give me a kiss, I'll call in the 'evening, and take a dish of tea with you: farewel.' —'Good morrow.—(After he is gone), for an old, 'impotent, poor spirited letcher, that must be treated 'like a dog, to make you know your duty. What 'fool would ever be at the trouble of behaving well 'to any fellow, when she can so much better mould him to her pleasure, by ill usage!'

CHAPTER XXIV.

The history and character of Chrysal's mistress. She gives him to a noted matron. Some account of his new mistress, and her manner of managing her family.

THIS principle she acted up to, for two days that I was in her possession, without any other variation in her conduct, than just what was necessary to work on the various tempers of her lovers, making no real difference between them, except it was, that she always used those worst, who used her best.

I have often told you, that sensuality is disagreeable to a spiritual being. I, therefore, longed to quit this mistress, the succession of whose amours was so constant and quick, that I was astonished how nature could afford a fund of love for them all, in so young a creature; for she was not twenty years old. I see you have a curiosity to know the history of this young votary of Venus, in which you think there must be something extraordinary; but you are deceived; it contains nothing but common occurrences.

She was the daughter of tradespeople, in moderate circumstances, whose foolish fondness, because she was a pretty, smart child, gave her an education above her rank, in hopes of her making her fortune by marriage.

This raised the vanity, natural to the female heart, so high, that she despised her own station, and not being so fortunate as immediately to climb to the one she desired, by the way proposed, she fell an easy victim to the first seducer who promised it in any other.

Thus the accomplishments, by which the injudicious tenderness of her parents meant to raise her into a rank higher than their own, became the cause of her falling into that of the lowest of all human beings: a fall, though deplorable in itself, yet unaffecting to her, as the time, in which her mind should have been formed to virtue, was given up to the nourishing that vanity which proved her ruin; so that she is absolutely insensible of the wretchedness of her condition, and never has the pursuit of her most infamous profession disturbed her by a moment's remorse.

I told you of her spending the hours that were unemployed at home, at an house in —— street, where she was always sure of business. Though this venerable mansion was dedicated to the mysterious rites of unrestrained love, yet, as the priests of all temples expect to live by the offerings made at them, her conscience would not permit the priestess of this, to break through an ordinance so long established, and she exacted fees from the votaries of her's: not indeed a tythe, indiscriminately from all, whether they received benefit from their devotion, or not; but always in proportion to the fruits they reaped.

At this shrine was I offered the third night of my being in the possession of this young devotee, when the plenteousness of her gain, from a multitude of lovers, seemed, to her piety, to merit so rich a return.

I now entered into a much more extensive scene than my last, the prostitution of which made but a small part of the business of the profession. But what I have related, in the history of my late mistress, shall suffice for that branch, nor shall I give more than some outlines of the horrors of the rest.

My new mistress had originally been of the sisterhood of my last, who having fallen a prey to lust, almost in her infancy, and having no beauty, nor any thing but extreme youth to recommend her, as soon as that was worn out, neglect obliged her to apply to other business for bread, and her natural turn determining her to this, as well as the outrageous virtue of the *undiscovered* part of her own sex, excluding her from every other, she changed her occupation, from *yielding* to *providing* pleasure, in which her success was so great, that she soon became the most eminent of her profession.

It was near five in the morning when I changed my service; and, business being ended, my late mistress having reigned *sole mistress* of the night, and seen out all the company, there remained nothing to do, after she went home, but to see the inmates to their truckle-beds in the cock-lofts, where stripping off every part, not only of the finery, but even of the comforts of dress, they were crowded three or four together, to keep each other warm, under a ragged coverlet, upon a bare mattress, where their shudderings and groans made a just contrast to the spirited wickedness of their conversation some hours before.

This was always the fate of those, who were not so successful in the evening as to earn the price of a better bed, above the fees of the house and the hire of clothes.

These happy few were treated with fondness, while they squandered their poor *peculium* in a drop of cordial to settle their heads, and were lodged in apartments suited to their purses: though the night before, perhaps, they had experienced the same fate with their sisters above stairs, and knew they must expect it again the next, if they proved unsuccessful in their business.

When matters were thus settled, this happy family disposed themselves to take the best repose which disease in mind and body would permit.

An active spirit disdains rest. Though debauchery had anticipated old age in the constitution of my mistress, yet her application to business made her refuse nature even necessary indulgence. She was ready to go out before ten that morning, when the modest decency of her dress and appearance were such as drew the general good opinion, and would almost deceive the *devil* himself, on whose most favourite service she was going.

CHAPTER XXV.

Chrysal's mistress pays a visit to the last place she could have been suspected for going to. She meets a young lady, with whom, by an artifice, she goes home. Her schemes to ensnare the lady.

IF a judgment were to be formed for the whole day, from the manner of beginning it, my mistress should have spent her's most happily; her first visit being to church, where the piety of her behaviour was an edification to the devout matrons, who, having nothing to do at home, meet there regularly, to compare their aches and dreams of the night before, and enjoy the innocent amusement of a little gossipping over the affairs of their neighbours.

But her devotion wasted not itself so fruitlessly; her industry had formed expectations of drawing considerable advantage from it, and so, anticipating futurity, and making sure of the reward here, which others waited for in another world. The immediate motive of her devotion, this morning, was to see a young lady with whom she had commenced an acquaintance at this church, and who constantly attended divine service there. You are surprised how she could think of going to such a place, on such an errand; but the wolf roams about for prey every where, and is often most successful, where his attempts are least suspected: though I must rob her

industry of the merit of design in the first introduction to this affair.

Going through St. Martin's Lane, one morning about a month before, she was so struck with the appearance of a lovely young creature, in widow's weeds, who was going into the church, that she followed her; where the fervency, with which she poured out her soul in devotion, gave such a lustre to her beauty, and made it shine so lovely through her grief, that my mistress immediately marked her for her *list*, not doubting but she should be able to turn her distress to such advantage, as should bring her into her measures, and make her beauty yield her a rich return for her pains, from some of her customers. If you consider the nature of woman-kind, you will not wonder at this instance of the profligacy of my mistress. They are ever in extremes; either the best or worst of human creatures. From church, she dogged her to her lodging in a little court, where she lived with a poor, but honest family, in such privacy that no one in the neighbourhood could give any account of her.

Real virtue shines with a lustre, that dazzles the most confirmed vice, and keeps it at an awful distance. My mistress, hardened as she was in all the ways of sin and impudence, dared not to go directly to her, without some business or introduction: but as she had not either, her ready genius prompted her to win her good opinion, under an appearance of religion, and then an acquaintance would come easily.

She was not deceived in her expectations: a few mornings constant attendance at church, and, the exemplary warmth of her devotions, struck the eye,

and opened the heart of unexperienced innocence to the acquaintance she wished for, which she did not fail to improve, by the same arts, to some degree of intimacy.

In this situation they were, when she went, but without any appearance of design, to meet her this morning at church, as usual. As they came out together, my mistress, turning with her fair *friend*, said she had some business in Long Acre, and asked her if she went that way, to which the young lady innocently answered, that she did, and that she should be glad to walk with her.

As they walked together, my mistress turned her conversation on the wicked ways of the town, and particularly the many base designs that were laid to ensnare unwary innocence, adding, that all the pleasure which sensuality could give the most luxurious heart, must fall infinitely short of what she felt at that very moment, in the design she was then going upon, of relieving the distresses of a worthy family.

She had timed her discourse so as to say these words just as she came to the entrance of the court, in which she knew the widow lived, when, feigning to slip, she fell all along, crying out, as in the utmost agony, that she had wrenched her ancle.

The lady raising her with the greatest tenderness, expressed her concern for the unhappy accident, and desired she would submit to be helped into *her* lodgings, which fortunately were at the next door, where, though she could be but poorly accommodated, she might be more at her ease than in a more sumptuous place, and should have all the care in her power. This was just what my mistress had schemed

for, who, courteously accepting the offer, made a shift to limp in, without any other assistance than her's.

It raised my indignation to see the tenderness with which the beautiful young creature pulled off her shoe and stocking, and chafed her ancle, thrown away upon so unworthy an object, as it did my abhorrence to hear the counterfeit shrieks and groans of my mistress, and the assurance with which she attributed the swellings caused by debauchery to this immediate accident.

This affrighted the young lady so, that she, in a manner, forced her to send for a surgeon, which with much entreaty she yielded to do; but it must be for a *friend* of her own, a gentleman who lived a considerable way off, at the polite end of the town, for she could not think of letting any *common low-lived* fellow come near her.

Upon this a porter was directly dispatched for her own surgeon, and in the mean time, as she began to grow easier, she recovered her spirits, and renewed the conversation that had been broken off by this accident.

'I was telling you, my dear friend,' said she, 'for 'so I shall ever call you from this moment, (your 'kindness having completed the conquest which 'your beauty had before made of my heart), I was 'telling you, that I was going to visit a family this 'morning, where I promised myself the highest joy 'that a human heart is capable of feeling, in lighten-'ing the distress of the virtuous, by sharing with 'them some of that wealth which heaven has abun-'dantly blessed me with, and which can justly be

'applied to no other use, than making this gratefu
'return to that goodness which bestowed it.

'But my heart was too elate with the thought, an
'I received this accident as a caution from heave
'not to flatter myself with any thing so strongly for
'the future. But, though I could not have this
'pleasure myself, the benefit shall not be delayed to
'them. I will make you my almoner; an office tha
'I know will suit the goodness of your heart. You
'shall give this packet, which will put an end to all
'their distresses.'

'Oh, madam! your good opinion is the greatest
'honour to me,' replied the lady, 'and I hope I shall
'never forfeit it, especially in this commission, which
'I shall undertake with the most sincere joy; but
'pray, dear madam, who are the persons to whom I
'must dispense your goodness?'

'That's true, my dear,' returned my mistress, 'I
'should give you some account of them, that you
'may be the better enabled to judge of the joy I feel
'in serving them. It is the widow of an officer, who
'has been killed in this war, and left her with three
'poor babes, destitute of every support but the allow-
'ance of the government, which, wretched as it is,
'and only aggravating misery by barely prolonging
'life under it, is often gasped for by the hungry
'mouth in vain, where interest is wanting to procure
'the immediate relief of it, as was her unhappy case,
'so that they must have actually perished for want
'of food, had not Providence brought them into my
'knowledge, seemingly by the greatest accident,
'about six months ago, since when, I have myself
'afforded them the necessary comforts of life, and
'have also made such interest for them, with some of
'my friends, that I have here got them a grant of a

'pension on the *Irish establishment*, sufficient to bring 'up the children, and make the remainder of the mo-'ther's days happy; for, my dear, I never do any 'thing by halves—Good God! child, what is the 'matter with you? What do you weep so for?'

'Nothing, dear madam,' replied the lady, 'no-'thing; I only sympathize in the distress of the poor 'widow.'—'But, my dear, that distress is now at an 'end.'—'O madam, let me carry her the blessing! 'let me not delay her happiness a moment! Who 'knows but that her heart is this minute bursting with 'the dreadful apprehensions of want for herself, and 'her dearer infants!'—'With all my heart, madam; 'but you will please to order a chair to be called to 'carry me home, when you go; for I cannot stay '*here* alone.'—'Dear madam, forgive my rudeness; 'I beg your pardon, pray forgive me: the distress of 'the widow put every thing out of my head; indeed 'it did; pray excuse me.'—'Excuse you, my dear, 'I honour the heart that feels another's woe; you 'shall go directly; you shall be the messenger of 'glad tidings to them. But, my dearest young lady, 'give me leave to tell you, that I fear you have not 'answered me sincerely; I fear your tears flow from 'some other cause, than mere sympathy; speak, my 'child! does any thing affect your own heart? Can 'I any way be serviceable to you? Command me 'freely, and make me happy in serving one for whom 'my heart has conceived so tender an esteem! Speak 'as you would to your own mother, and wrong not 'my friendship with a doubt.'—'O madam, madam!' 'replied the mourner, as soon as sobbing permitted utterance, 'I have no mother to make my complaint 'to; I am the wretched widow you have described! 'A widow, without support, without friends, or any 'other hope than just in heaven.'—'And heaven will

'raise you friends, my dearest child! Heaven has 'raised you a friend in me! You shall be *my* child; 'I look upon you as my own! as a gift from heaven, 'from this moment! You shall leave this place this 'very day! It is not fit for *my* child! I will take a 'lodging for you near myself till *my nephew*, who is 'lately come to town to see me, goes home; and then 'you shall live with me for ever.'

'Saying these words, she threw her arms round her destined victim, and wiped away the tears that flowed down her cheeks, while a variety of passions filled her tender heart almost to bursting.

CHAPTER XXVI.

The history of the young lady. She is critically interrupted by the arrival of an unexpected person. She is reconciled to her father, who rewards the woman of the house, and resolves to punish the bawd.

WHEN she had recovered herself a little, my mistress thus resumed her lore. 'Weep not, my dearest 'child, all will be well. And have you any dear 'little infants too?' 'Oh, no! my wretchedness, 'thank heaven, is all my own!' 'But may I, my 'dear, ask your name, and the circumstances of your 'story! I would know all, that nothing may be unredressed.' 'You are all goodness, madam! My 'story, alas! has few circumstances, and they are 'all distresses! I lost my mother while I was yet

'a child: my father left me in the country to the 'care of a governess, the wife of his chaplain, who 'educated me in the sentiments of piety and virtue. 'When I was scarce fourteen I returned the love of 'her son, the most deserving and most lovely of his 'sex, who was two years older than me: but, young 'as we were, we concealed our passion, till my father 'obtained him a commission in the army; when, on 'the regiment's being ordered to America, I yielded 'to his fear of losing me, and consented to a private 'marriage, which was soon discovered by a letter 'falling into my father's hands, who, in his rage, 'turned my husband's father and mother, and me, 'out of doors, nor would ever see us more. A small 'vicarage afforded us a present support. My mo-'ther-in-law soon died; the suspicion of her having 'betrayed the confidence of my father, and been in-'strumental in my marriage, breaking her heart; as 'did the account of my husband's death, his father's. 'I then was left quite destitute, and have since sup-'ported a wretched being by my work, which the 'honest woman of this house takes in for me, without 'the least hope of relief in this world, till your good-'ness has, this day, taken compassion on me.'— 'And what is your father's name, my dear?' 'That 'I have never yet revealed, as I would willingly 'hide the disgrace my distress may be thought to do 'him; but with you I need not use that caution; his 'name is——'

Just at this word, the surgeon, who had been sent for to my mistress, entered, and presented a new scene.

At the first sight of this person, the young lady gave a great shriek, and swooned away. The gentleman stood a moment stupified with astonish-

ment, when turning hastily to my mistress, 'Is this 'the lady?' said he.—'Aye, and a lovely one she is,' answered she; 'but help me to raise her up, when 'you will see her better; she has been just telling 'me her story, and the grief of it has overcome her: 'it is a moving one; and she must be our own.'

'O my child! my child!' exclaimed he in a transport, and, spurning my mistress from her with his feet, raised her himself, and leaned her head upon his bosom, kissing her, and almost smothering her with his tears. 'Oh! my poor child! what have you 'escaped!—what have you endured!'

It is impossible to describe the situation of my mistress at this scene. She saw the error she had been guilty of, in introducing a woman to whom she was a stranger; and was aware of the danger with which the horror of such an interview on such an occasion threatened her. While, therefore, the father seemed wrapped in an ecstasy that made him as insensible as his daughter, she thought it the best way to retire from the first burst of his anger, and, forgetting her sprained ancle, was going directly away; but he perceived her intent, and calling her with a voice that nailed her to the ground, 'Stir not, upon 'your life,' said he; 'I will have this whole mystery 'cleared up.'

His daughter, just then, opening her eyes, and finding herself laid upon her father's bosom, love, duty, respect, fear, and joy, filled her heart with such a variety of passions, that she sunk under their weight, and swooned away.

This embarrassed the father almost to distraction, till the woman of the house coming in, with her

assistance, she was at length recovered, for my mistress was so terrified, that she did not dare to approach her.

As soon as the lady had lightened her heart by a flood of tears, she threw herself at her father's feet, unable either to look up, or to speak to him. Moved with the mute eloquence of her grief, and melting in the warmth of nature, he raised her from the ground, and spoke to her in these words. 'Be comforted; 'my child! I am! I will be your father! But tell 'me what has passed between you and this vile wo- 'man!'—'Oh, sir, is she not my best, my only 'friend? Has she not restored me to your love?'—'Have a care, child! She your friend? then you 'are lost beyond recovery indeed! she is a reproach 'to her sex! to human nature!'—'Oh, Sir! how 'can that be? Did she not bring you here to me? 'does not that shew her virtue and compassion to my 'distress?'—'Compose yourself a little, child! it is 'true, she brought me here; but tell me, I charge 'you, on what terms she told you I was to come; and 'how she came to interest herself in your affairs! 'Fear not, but speak the truth.'

On this she told him the whole of her acquaintance with my mistress, and by what accident, and in what character, she imagined he had been sent for; but that as soon as she saw *him* enter the room, she thought my mistress must have have been acquainted with her story, and had taken this method of introducing her to him, in hopes the surprise and sight of her distress might operate on his compassion.

Truth forces conviction. He was satisfied with the account she gave him; and taking her again in

his arms, 'I have found you again, my child,' said he, 'and I will never lose you more! Be the errors of your youth, be my severity forgotten! From henceforth you are my child, and I will be your 'father! As to that vile wretch, know that her whole 'acquaintance with you was sought with a premeditated design of betraying you to ruin. She told me 'the whole nearly as you have done; and encouraged 'by your distress, of which she had gotten some 'general hints, but ignorant who you were, she laid 'the scheme of this pretended accident to get admission into your house; for she well knew where you 'lived, and then sent for me, to a place I had 'appointed, that I might come and see you, under the 'appearance of a surgeon; that if I liked you, I 'might have the preference of her interest in you: for 'so deep had she laid her scheme, that you could not 'have escaped her: the trial would have been too 'great for human fortitude! And this most execrable 'mystery of iniquity did she undertake for the paltry 'reward of fifty pounds, which, I must take the shame 'upon myself to own, I had promised her, little imagining that I was bargaining for the seduction of 'my own innocent child. But I see, I acknowledge 'the hand of heaven in this whole affair, that has 'thus opened my eyes to the danger of such a licentious course of life, and made the recovery of my 'child the means, and the reward of my conversion.'

'Weep not, my dear; justly may you turn your 'eyes with detestation from such a fiend: But I 'shall take care that she meets a just reward; while 'you prepare to go home with me, for I will not leave 'you a moment in this scene of horror.'—'Oh, 'mercy, mercy, my lord!' cried my mistress, 'have 'mercy on me! nor overwhelm with your anger, a

'wretched creature, whose remorse is a load too 'great to bear.' 'Away, vile wretch,' replied he, in a rage, 'nor dare to speak another word! And here, 'fellow,' calling to the porter, who had directed him to the house, 'bring me the parish constable.'

While the porter went for him, my mistress, wretched now indeed, her guilty fears magnifying her danger, stood trembling, but afraid to assay his pity with another word.

After he had walked a turn or two about the room, his daughter entered, and with her the woman of the house with her little effects, which were soon packed up: at the sight of them his countenance softened: 'Well, my dear,' said he to his daughter, 'I see you 'are ready to come with me; but I must wait a mo-'ment, to do justice to the wretch who brought me 'hither. Plead not for her! I would not have you 'ever sue to me in vain, again; and to any thing in 'her favour I cannot yield! But my justice shall not 'only be severe, nor confined to her alone. You 'have said that this honest woman has been a friend 'to you; she shall be rewarded. Here, good wo-'man, is the sum of money I was to have given this 'vile creature for my daughter in another sense. Take 'it, as the reward of your honesty and kindness to 'her; and call on her every year of your life for the 'same sum.'

The poor woman took it with reverence, but was unable to speak her gratitude, her heart was so full, while his daughter dropped suddenly upon her knees, and raising her hands and eyes to heaven, exclaimed in rapture, '*O pour thy blessings, Heaven, on his* '*head, who thus dispenses happiness on all who merit* '*it!*' As she said these words, the constable came,

into whose charge his lordship gave my mistress to be taken to a justice of the peace, whither he appointed to follow her; and then handed his daughter into a coach, in which he took her directly home.

CHAPTER XXVII.

The address of Chrysal's mistress, and civility of a constable. She arrives at the justice's, and is softened by his clerk, and terrified by his worship. Chrysal changes his service.

AS soon as this happy couple were gone, my mistress recovered her spirits, and smiled with contempt at a danger she had often gone through before, without harm. 'And so,' says she, 'master constable, I am given in charge to you! and for what 'pray? But I am no such novice as to yield myself 'a prisoner, till I see proper authority to hold me; 'therefore, Sir, I shall wish you a good morning: 'if you please, you may go tell his lordship, that I 'was not at leisure to wait for him at the justice's; 'and, because you may be dry after your walk, here 'is a crown to drink my health.'

'I thank you, mistress,' replied the constable, taking the money, 'but in the mean time you must come! 'I am sorry I cannot let you go.'—'Cannot let me 'go? Pray, Sir, where is your authority to keep me?' —'Here, mistress!' producing his staff. 'But your 'warrant!'—'Oh! as for that, I'll make bold to do

'without one this time, and take you to the justice on 'my own authority, and his lordship's request; and 'so, mistress, you had better come along, for I am 'in haste: you may have a coach if you please.'— 'Aye, so I will, to carry me home! and here's some-'thing for you to pay the coachman,' putting a gui-nea in his hand. 'Tis very well, mistress, I will see 'you safe home, to be sure, if you desire it, and the 'justice gives you leave; for to him we must go di-'rectly.'—'Then give me my money; and be assured 'you shall answer for this false imprisonment.'— 'Your money, mistress! why, aye? so I will, if I 'do not earn it.' 'Then let me go home this mo-'ment.'—'No, no, mistress! that I cannot do till 'you have been to visit his worship; and then I will 'see you safe home, if he gives me leave, and drink 'your health into the bargain; and that was what 'you gave me the money for: come, come, mistress, 'one of your trade should know better things than to 'ask for money back again! Have I not shewed you 'all the *civility* in my power? Do you think I would 'stand preaching with you here this hour for nothing? 'come along, the coach is at the door.'

I *saw* you were surprised at the address and turn of expression in my mistress's conversation with this young lady, before the arrival of her father, as above her sphere; but nature had given her a capacity equal to any thing, and her intercourse with the *po-lite* world had gained her an ease of behaviour, and elegance of expression, that made every condition of life seem natural to her. As to the story of the family, whom she was going to relieve, she had ac-tually prepared one of her confederates to have acted that part, so that the lord might justly say, her design was laid so well, that it was next to impossible for her to miss of success. For, by this deceit, she

would have gained the young lady's confidence, to receive favours from her, and, when she had her in her debt, she thought she could make her own terms.

As soon as my mistress and her conductor were come into the anti-chamber of justice, the clerk, recognizing her, addressed her thus: 'Good-morrow, 'mistress; pray what has got us the favour of your 'company? You have been so great a stranger of 'late, that I was beginning to think we had lost you.' 'Pray, Sir,' said she, 'let me speak a word with 'you in the next room.' On which he ordered her to be shewn in, and only waited to ask the constable, by whom, and for what, she was sent there, who was able to give him no other answer, than that the lord had ordered him to bring her, and said he would follow himself directly.

Having got this *full* information, the clerk came into the room to my mistress, and told her, with a look of importance and concern, that he was sorry to see her on so bad an account. 'So bad an account, 'Sir!' said she, 'why? pray what do you think I 'am brought here for? Nothing in this world! they 'can charge me with nothing but intention; and I 'hope that is not punishable by the law!' 'I hope 'it will appear so,' replied he; 'but,' shrugging up his shoulders, 'my lord has sent a message here, 'that has another appearance!' 'And pray, Sir, 'what does my lord charge me with?' 'You'll ex-'cuse my revealing the secrets of a privy-counsellor! 'He will be here too soon, I am afraid, to tell you 'himself.'

Versed as my mistress was in all the wiles of man, the look and manner of his saying these words alarmed her conscious fears. 'Pray, Sir,' said she,

'what has his lordship said? or, if you do not think 'proper to tell me that, at least you can direct me 'how to make the best defence against his designs! 'I shall not be ungrateful! you know I never was.' 'Why, that's true, madam,' replied he; 'and indeed 'I should take great pleasure in serving you, and 'getting you out of this *hole*: but my lord, you know, 'is a great man, and can, in a manner, do what he 'pleases with poor people.' 'Pray, Sir, can I speak 'a word to the justice?' 'I fear he is engaged just 'now; besides, it is so long since he has seen or 'heard from you, that I believe you must expect but 'little favour from him.' 'Why, that is the very 'thing I would speak to him about; and believe me, 'it was my business out so early this morning, till I 'was delayed by this unlucky accident.' 'As for 'that matter, you know you may say any thing to 'me, as well as to him, and I can tell him.' 'That 'is true: why, all I have to say to him, at present, 'is to beg his acceptance of these five guineas for 'his past favours, and his advice how to get out of 'this scrape; and pray do you take these three for 'your trouble. I am sorry I have no more to offer, 'but really the times are very bad, and little or no 'money stirring among the gentlemen; beside, all 'my ladies have been very unlucky of late, and the 'doctor, you know, must be always paid in hand.'— 'I am sorry things go so badly with you; I will 'speak to the justice, and let you know what he 'says, and you may depend on my friendship and 'interest at all times; though I am afraid this is a 'very bad affair. I will go to him directly, and 'return to you as soon as possible.'

I here left my mistress to her meditations, having been one of the pieces she had given to the clerk. You may imagine I was glad to leave such a ser-

vice, though I could not promise myself much pleasure, beside variety, in the exchange; from what I had already seen of that which I was entering into.

The justice was in his office, busied in examining the informations of some of his people, who had made some lucky hits the evening before. On a wink from his clerk, they were all ordered to withdraw; when reaching me and four more of my brethren to his worship; 'Here, sir,' said he, 'is five 'guineas from Mrs. ——.' 'So then,' replied he, 'she has thought proper to come at last.' 'To 'come? no, no, Sir! she has been brought, or else 'I believe you would have hardly seen her.' 'The 'ungrateful jade! but what is the matter now?' 'I 'really cannot well tell; nor does the constable know 'any more, than that my lord —— ordered him to 'bring her, and said that he should follow himself.' 'My lord! then I must be ready to receive him pro-'perly: he is a great man: quick! reach me my 'green velvet cap, red slippers, and new gown, open 'half a score of those books, the largest of them, and 'lay them on that great table, as if I had been re-'ferring. There! now I look like a justice! and 'bid these gentry, I was speaking to, go backwards 'till my lord is gone: he must not see such faces; 'they might prejudice him against us; and he is a 'great man: so now I'll open the new justice, and 'his lordship may come as soon as he pleases.'

Just as all things were thus prepared for his lordship's reception, in proper formality, a servant brought a note from him, to let his worship know, he could not come himself that morning, but desired he would take proper care of the woman he had ordered to be taken before him, who kept a house of bad fame in such a street, where, upon the least inquiry, he would

not fail to find sufficient matter against her, from her neighbours.

Though his lordship's not coming was a disappointment to his worship, after the preparations made to receive him; and balked him of an important advertisement for the next morning; yet the general wording of this note gave him some consolation, as it might seem to authorize any measures he might please to take, to squeeze the criminal before him.—'This 'may do,' said he to he clerk, 'this may do some-'thing: but we must proceed with caution, for Mrs. '——— is an old *hand:* let her be called in: I'll '*soften* her a little first, and then you may work upon 'her after as you please.' As soon as she came in, his worship accosted her thus: 'So mistress; this is 'a fine affair; I knew what your doings would come 'to, at last; I have often warned you; but you 'would take no advice; and now you see the conse-'quence! Do, make her *mittimus!* I must wait upon 'his lordship; and I cannot go till she is committed!' —'Committed! dear, your worship, for what must I 'be committed? I have done nothing.' 'No! to be 'sure, you have done nothing! his lordship would 'prosecute you so severely for nothing; look at this 'letter! Do you know this hand-writing? His lord-'ship has here given me an account of the whole 'affair, and desired that I would proceed against you 'with the utmost rigor of the law! I have already 'sent to search your house.'

This word completed the terrors, into which the sight of his lordship's well-known hand had thrown her; and deprived her of all resolution and presence of mind.—She burst into tears, and throwing herself on her knees, 'Oh, good your worship! dear Mr. 'Clerk,' said she, 'advise me; assist me to get over

'this misfortune! Here is my watch; it cost fifty 'pounds at a pawnbroker's but a month ago: it is a 'repeater: take it, Mr. Justice! Mr. Clerk, here are 'my rings; they are the only valuable things I have: 'take them, and help me out at this dead lift: send, 'and stop the people from going into my poor house; 'I shall be *blown up:* the gentlemen will all desert 'me: I shall be ruined, just when I have brought 'things to a little bearing: help me but this once, 'and I never will give you cause to complain of me 'again: I will always be punctual to my promise.'

CHAPTER XXVIII.

She is discharged upon proper bail. The labours of Chrysal's new master, in the service of the public, with some of the various mysteries of his office.

THE work was now done, and a wink having settled the *cue* between the justice and his clerk, the latter began thus. 'If I may presume to advise your wor-' 'ship, though this is a very bad affair, to be sure, yet 'as it is not quite felony *by the statute*, I am humbly 'of opinion, that if bail could be got.'—'Dear Mr. 'Clerk, I am obliged to you.'—'But then, consider, 'my lord is a great man.'—'That is true, please your 'worship; but the law is greater than any man, and 'the law is very tender of the liberty of the subject, 'and says expressly *in the statute, in favore liberta-* 'tis, that no person shall be confined that can get

'bail; and beside, who knows, if she was at liberty, 'but she might find means to be reconciled to his 'lordship, and so all would be well.'—'Dear, Mr. 'Clerk, that is true; I would easily be reconciled to 'him; I know how to gain his favour when his anger 'is a little cooled.'—'Why, mistress, if you are 'quite sure of that, I believe we may venture to bail 'you: but where are your friends?'—'Dear, your 'worship, I have no friends; I have nothing to make 'friends with; I throw myself upon you, gentlemen!' —'Why, really, this is a nice case, but if you'll step 'into the next room, we'll consider what can be done 'for you.'—'O! but send and stop the men that 'went to my house!'—'Never fear,' they were not to 'go without further orders.'

When she was gone out, 'Well,' said the justice, 'this has been a good *hit*, it makes up for the bad 'week: but cannot you guess what this matter is?' 'Not a word of it,' replied the clerk; 'she has not 'dropped a syllable herself, that could let me the 'least into it, and I would not discover my igno-'rance, by asking her any questions. But I suppose 'it is only some trick she has played my lord about 'a girl, for you know she has often told us, that he 'was one of her best customers, and boasted of his 'protection; and if it is no more than that, as I ima-'gine, he will think no more of it, and, so the best 'way is to let her go; for indeed we cannot keep 'her, if we would; though to keep up the form, for 'fear she should *smell* us out, she must have some 'bail; and therefore I'll go and fill a bond, and 'make a couple of our people put on their *bailing* '*clothes*, and come and sign with her, though I do 'not think she has money left to pay for the bond, 'or make the fellows drink: but she has done pretty 'well already, that is the truth.'

Saying this, he went out, and in a little time returned with my late mistress, and two of the fellows, the shabbiness of whose appearance, had made his worship order them out of the lord's sight just before, now dressed out like reputable housekeepers, who gravely signed with my mistress, without ever asking what; and upon her returning a negative shrug, to a wink from the clerk, went out, without a word.

The business was now over, and my late mistress dismissed to follow her occupation, and make up, by double diligence, for the misfortunes of that morning, only with an assurance to the clerk that she would remember his kindness, and be *punctual* for the future.

I was now entered into a service, where I had an opportunity of seeing into the whole mystery of justice: but you must not expect that I should reveal all the secrets of so venerable a trade: though I may give a few general hints for your information in so abstruse and intricate a science.

The affair of my late mistress was the last of that morning; my worshipful master putting *me* into his purse, and going directly to dinner, which had *waited* for him some time. But, though his fare was good, his care for the public would not permit him to make long meals, or debauch away his time. After a short refreshment of only two hours, he returned to his office, where he reassumed his labours, in all the various branches of his extensive employment. The first thing he looked into was the *informations*, which the affair of my mistress had interrupted in the morning, as I told you before: when calling his people, one after another, before him, he went through them regularly, in this manner: 'John Gibbet, you here

'inform me that you have found out the person who 'took the gentleman's hat, in the quarrel in Chelsea 'fields, last Sunday evening, which you think to 'make a robbery of: let me hear the circumstances 'of that affair, for you are so keen a blood-hound, 'when you get upon any scent, that you are for 'making every thing robbery, be the case what it 'will.'

'Please your worship,' replied Gibbet, turning the *quid* in his cheek, and squirting out the juice, 'I 'do all things for the best, and that you know; and 'that I have brought many things to bear, which no-'body else would undertake, as witness that affair 'on Shuter's hill, that got you so much credit, and 'money too.' 'Why that's true, John; but then you 'should also remember the cursed scrape you brought 'me into about the young fellow who wrote the 'threatening letters to the farmer, about burning his 'barns: you undertook to prove that too: but you 'know how you left me in the lurch, after I had 'gone such lengths as had like to have ruined me. 'Plain swearing will not always do, though never so 'home, you should remember that: you should attend 'to circumstances also: but as to this affair, let me 'hear what you can make of it.'

'Your worship must know that *I*, and two or 'three more of our people, having nothing to do, '*shammed* a quarrel, in which a gentleman, who was 'coming by, lost his hat. It was a large hat, with 'a very broad gold lace, such as your foreigners 'wear; it was I that shoved off the hat, and seeing 'a shabby, idle-looking young fellow standing by, 'without one, I took it up, and, asking him if it was 'his, reached it to him, and saw him make off with it 'directly. Now, if this is not a plain robbery, I do

'not know what is! A fellow runs away with a 'gentleman's hat, who advertises it, with a reward 'for taking the thief, whom he will prosecute! now 'I have found out the fellow's haunts, for indeed I 'dogged him, and will have himself whenever you 'please, and can clench the prosecution, by swear-'ing that I saw him carry off the hat; and you know 'I need say no more, nor take any notice who gave 'it him.'

'Why, John, there may be something in this 'affair. I like it very well, John; and so, clerk, 'you may enter him on the list for next sessions. 'This affair has a good look; nor is there any thing 'unjust in it: for, though you gave him the hat, as 'he knew it was not his own, and yet carried it off, 'he is guilty of the theft, and that is the same as 'robbery, in justice, though it may not in law; and 'justice is the thing to go by, with a safe conscience. 'And so you may go, John; I will let you know 'when it is proper to have him taken up, only have 'an eye to him, for fear any one else should snap 'him out of our hands. Who comes next? Richard 'Sly, you say you have found out the knot of young 'fellows that have begun to infest the streets for some 'nights past.' 'Aye, please your worship,' says Sly, shrugging up his shoulders and grinning, 'I 'have found them out, to be sure; and well I might; 'for it was I first set them on the *lay*.' 'How, Ri-'chard! take care of what you say.' 'Oh! your 'worship, never fear Dick Sly for a slippery trick! 'I know what I say very well: I have known for 'some time that these youths have been playing a 'small game, cribbing from the *till*, and building '*sconces*, and such-like tricks, that there was no 'taking hold of; I therefore thought it would be 'right to bring them to justice, at any rate, and so

'laid the plan of this gang, and entered them into 'the business myself, and now, whenever you have 'a mind to *nab* them, you need only take me up, and 'I can *peach* them all, which will be no bad affair, 'there are so many of them.' 'Why, that is true, 'Richard; but they have done nothing yet that de- 'serves so severe a remedy as the gallows! there- 'fore let them alone; perhaps they may mend: or, 'if they do not, it will be time enough to take them 'up when they deserve it more than now. To be 'sure, your peaching them, who first drew them in, 'is not so very just; but then the law will support 'you in it, and, while a man has the law on his side, 'he may laugh at the gallows. And so, Richard, 'have a good look-out till these youths are ripe for 'Tyburn, and then your harvest will come!'

It would be endless to go through this whole business particularly. Be it sufficient to say, that there was no breach of the laws, which some of his people did not give him an information of, and almost all, as accomplices; while his whole care was to consider, which could turn most to his advantage, in the conviction, and to settle the evidence against them, so as it might be sure not to miscarry.

CHAPTER XXIX.

A highwayman, improperly taken, saves his life, by losing his reason. Judicial sagacity, and eloquence triumphant over common-sense, and matter of fact. This mystery explained.

WHILE he was in the midst of this business, he was surprised with the news of an highwayman, that moment brought in by a gentleman who had taken him, in the very attempt of robbing him on Turnham Green. This threw the whole house into an uproar. —'An highwayman taken, and by the very party!' exclaimed the justice, in an agony of rage and vexation. 'This is most unfortunate; there is forty 'pounds dead loss, besides the shame of it; how 'shall I support my consequence, if other people can 'serve the public without my assistance?'

'I wonder who it can be,' said the clerk; 'I sup- 'pose the man on the white mare, or the mask, from 'Putney Common! but, whoever it is, something 'must be done! *He* must be saved this time, to save '*our* credit, and we may have him the next our- 'selves! Here they come: do you keep the gentle- 'man in discourse, while I speak to the prisoner, and 'and see how he can *come down*. I shall readily 'give you your *cue*.'

Just then entered the gentleman with his prisoner, whom they directly knew to be an old offender, who had long baffled their pursuit: a circumstance that heightened the vexation of his being taken by another, and was not a little favourable to him at this time.

His worship received the gentleman most politely, and desired him to sit down a moment, till he should finish a letter he was writing to the *secretary of state*, and then he would attend to his business, ordering the prisoner to be removed into another room for the mean time.

He then sat himself down to write with great deliberation, and had *just finished*, when his clerk came to deliver him a letter *from the lord mayor*, which he read over attentively, and saying it was very well, he then turned to the gentleman, and, asking his pardon, for making him wait so long, ordered the prisoner to be brought in.

The highwayman appeared now a quite different person, from what he did when he was in the room a few minutes before; his looks, which were then clouded with the gloom of listless dejection and despair, being inflamed into the fiercest agitations of frensy.

The gentleman shewed his surprise at this change, as did his worship his uneasiness for his own safety, from the fury of so outrageous a madman. As soon as he was *secured*, the justice addressing himself, with the height of judicial solemnity, to the prosecutor, 'Pray, Sir,' said he, 'will you please to inform 'me what you have to alledge against this unhappy 'person?'—'Sir,' replied the gentleman, 'all I have

'to say, is, that he stopped me this afternoon, upon 'Turnham Green, and presenting a pistol at me, bid 'me deliver my money; but being well armed, and 'having more about me than I chose to lose, in-'stead of my purse, I drew a pistol too, and, his 'missing fire, I grappled with, and took him on the 'spot, and from thence brought him directly here: 'that is all I have to say, Sir!'

'And pray, Sir, what did he say when you had 'taken him?' 'Not a word, Sir, nor has he spoke a 'syllable since; nor answered any one question he 'has been asked.' 'Aye, it is so, poor gentleman, 'it is so! And pray, Sir, did he make much resist-'ance when you took him?' 'The utmost he was 'able; but being better mounted, and much stronger 'than he, I soon overpowered him, though not with-'out great danger; for, after I had him down, he 'drew this knife, and very narrowly missed plunging 'it into my body! You see what a cut it made in 'my coat and waistcoat!' 'Aye, poor man, mad-'ness is always desperate: I fear, Sir, you have 'been too hasty in this affair.' 'How, Sir, too hasty, 'to take a man in the very action of highway rob-'bery? I do not understand you, Sir!'

'Sir, I mean that this person is no robber, but an 'unhappy gentleman of family and fortune, who has 'been for some time out of his mind: I have been 'applied to by his relations more than once, to try to 'have him apprehended, that he might be confined; 'and, now he is secured, they will take proper care 'of him, that he shall not frighten any body for the 'future; for I am satisfied, Sir, that was all he 'meant; and that he would not have taken your 'money, had you offered it to him: I suppose you 'searched him when you had overpowered him, poor

'man, as you justly termed it! Pray, Sir, did you 'find any thing upon him, to make you think he was 'a highwayman? Any watches? jewels? or diffe-'rent purses of money? or more money than you 'might think it probable a person of his appearance 'might commonly carry about him.'

'No, really, Sir, I did not find any thing like what 'you mention! This purse which seems to have 'about thirty or forty guineas in it (for I have not 'reckoned them) was the only thing in all his pockets, 'except the knife which he drew on me; his pistols 'were openly in his saddle, as gentlemen commonly 'wear them.'

'Very well; and does not his present behaviour, 'and whole conduct in this affair, convince you, that 'the unhappy man could have no felonious intent in 'his mad attack upon you? for men, mad as he is, 'have no intention at all; and, without a felonious 'intent, there can be no robbery: but I presume, 'you may understand something of the law yourself, 'Sir?'

'No, indeed, Sir; I cannot say I know any more 'law, than just not to wrong any person, nor let 'them wrong me, if I can help it, as far as common-'sense will direct me: I thank God, I have spent 'my days quietly in the country; and never had a 'dispute with any man in my life.'

'Common-sense, dear Sir! common-sense is a 'blind guide in matters of law? Law and common-'sense are quite different things; but as I was say-'ing, Sir, where there is no felonious intent, there 'can be no felony; now robbery is punished only 'because it is felony, for so the indictment must be

'laid; *felonice*, Sir, *felonice*, or it will not do! The 'indictment will be quashed without that word; and 'who can charge a man with a felonious intent, who 'is disordered in mind, and can have no intention at 'all? 'Tis true, the appearance was bad, and suffi-'ciently terrifying, to authorize your apprehending 'him: but, as you suffered neither loss nor hurt, I 'cannot suppose, that a gentleman of your humane 'appearance would desire to add to the misery of 'his present unhappy condition, that of imprisonment 'till the next sessions, when he must be acquitted of 'course, as that would certainly make his madness 'for ever incurable. Whatever expense you have 'been at in bringing him here, I will take upon me to 'reimburse you out of the money in his purse, beside 'what gratification you please to require, for your 'own time and trouble! This, Sir, is what I would 'recommend to you, as a Christian and a gentleman, 'as you appear to be: but, if you are of another opi-'nion, you must only swear to your information, and 'enter into a recognizance of prosecution, while I 'sign his *mittimus*, and send word to his friends, 'who are people of condition.'

'Indeed, Sir, you judge very rightly of me; I 'would not aggravate the distress of any human 'being! If you know the unhappy man, and that he 'is under so severe an affliction, as the loss of rea-'son, I have nothing farther to say, than that I am 'sorry for his misfortune, and would not for the 'world be the cause of heightening it, as I had no 'motive for apprehending him, but the duty which I 'and every member owe the public. I thank heaven 'for my own escape from him, and do not desire to 'make any advantage of it. As to the people who 'assisted me in bringing him hither, they are still 'unpaid, and you know best how to deal with them.

'So I leave the whole affair to you, and am your 'humble servant.'

I have not interrupted this account with any notice of the behaviour of the criminal, as it consisted only of the most outrageous imitation of madness with imprecations and blasphemies, too horrid for repetition.

As soon as the gentleman was gone, and the room cleared of all but the justice, his clerk, and the *madman*, who was left bound to keep up the farce, his worship thus adddressed him, 'So, Sir, you thought 'to reign for ever; but you see what your fates have 'come to! I suppose you are surprised at the pains 'I have taken to bring you through this affair!'— 'Not at all, Sir,' replied the criminal, 'the bank-'note for two hundred pounds which I concealed in 'the sleeve of my coat, and gave your clerk.'— 'How, Sir,' said the justice in a rage, 'do you pre-'tend to say it was upon any such account; But you 'judge of others by yourself. However, I shall not 'stand to argue the matter with you now; you have 'escaped for this time, and may be glad of it; but 'take care for the future: your luck may not always 'be so good.'—'Will your worship please to order 'your people to return my horse and arms? and I 'hope you will give me my purse; for life without 'something to support it is no great obligation.'— 'What, Sir! do you pretend to capitulate? Your 'horse you shall have, not that you have a right to 'expect him, but because it would not be proper to 'keep him, after the representation that imposed upon 'the fool who took you; and here are half a score 'guineas to carry you to some place where you are 'not known, and to maintain you till you can get 'into some honest way of earning your bread. The

'rest is little enough to give the people instead of 'your horse, and to stop their mouths. You may 'stay here till the crowd is dispersed, when you may 'go where you please.'—As there was no remedy, the criminal has forced to submit; nor indeed did he seem much dissatisfied at the heaviness of his composition.

CHAPTER XXX.

An instance of his worship's exemplary justice on a shoplifter. The unfashionable compassion and generosity of a sailor. A dispute about superiority of skill, between his worship and his clerk, open new mysteries in the profession.

IT was now pretty late, and my master was just retiring to supper, pleased with having made so good a day, when he was stopped by more business. A woman who kept a chandler's shop, in the next street, had dragged before him one of her poor neighbours, whom she had caught in the fact of stealing a pound of cheese off her counter, as she was reaching a two-penny loaf from the shelf: a crime that was heightened by ingratitude too, as she was giving her the loaf on trust; the thief having owned to her, that she had not a farthing in the world to pay for it, nor a morsel to give her three small children, who had been fasting the whole day.

Enraged at the heinousness of the crime, and at being kept from supper, while the chickens and aspa-

ragus were cooling on the table, his worship, knitting his brows, and putting on all the magistrate, asked the trembling wretch, with a voice that pierced her soul,—'What she had to say for herself, and whether she was guilty of the crime laid to her charge, 'or not.'—

The poor creature, almost dead with wretchedness, want, and fear, threw herself at his feet, and pouring out a flood of tears, that for some moment choaked her utterance, 'O mercy! mercy!' said she, 'for 'the love of the sweet Jesus, have mercy on a poor 'wretch: whom want alone compelled to this first 'offence, to save the lives of three poor infants, who 'are this moment perishing with hunger. Oh! send 'and prove the truth of what I say; send and learn 'their misery, and it will move you to relieve them, 'and then I care not what becomes of me.'—'Very 'fine, truly! if we admit such excuses for shop-lifting, there will be enough ready to plead them. 'Here, make her *mittimus*; she confesses the fact; 'as for her brats bastards too, I suppose, let them 'be sent to the workhouse.'—'Oh, the poor creatures! they are not bastards; and they have no 'parish to be sent to. My husband is a sailor, who 'was pressed on board a man of war, six years ago, 'and has been in the West-Indies ever since, till the 'summer, when the ship was ordered home to be laid 'up. Poor soul! he thought they should be paid 'off, and so wrote me word to Cork come to him, 'for he meant to go and settle in Scotland, his own 'country; but the moment he came to Portsmouth, 'he was turned over into another ship, without getting 'a shilling of his six-years' wages or prize-money, 'and sent away directly to America; so that after 'spending every penny I had in the world, to come 'to him from Ireland, as he desired, I am left here

'with my poor children to starve in a strange place, 'where nobody has any compassion for me, though 'my husband wrote me word, that he had above three 'bundred pounds due to him for wages and prize-'money; here is his letter: I never go without it; it 'is all the comfort I have in my distress.'

'Aye, I thought so! I thought you were one of 'those Irish thieves that came to rob us, and cut our 'throats; but I shall take care of you; I shall make 'you wish you had continued eating potatoes at 'home. I wish I could provide as well for every 'one of your country; we shall never be well till we 'have hanged you all.'—'Oh, good your worship; I 'am no thief, I never stole any thing before, and this 'woman, who has brought me before you, knows the 'truth of every thing I have told your worship; and 'that I have always paid her honestly while I had a 'penny in the world, for I have dealt with her ever 'since I came to London; but hunger, and the 'cries of three starving children, forced me to this! 'oh, my children, my children!'—'Peace, woman! 'All you can say signifies nothing: you were taken 'in the fact, and to Newgate you shall go directly. 'And as for your brats, it is better for them to die of 'hunger now, than to live to be hanged like their 'mother.'

By this time the mittimus was ready, which he signed without the least hesitation or pity, and then hurried away to his supper, having almost fretted his bowels out, to think it was spoiled by waiting so long.

But though the justice's compassion could not be moved by such a *poor* wretch, his clerk was not so inexorable, but yielded to the persuasion of an honest

tar, who seeing a crowd at the door, had given sixpence to go in and see the fun; and for two guineas, *which barely paid his fees*, ventured to make up the affair, and let her go about her business, though he did not know what might be the consequence, if it should come to his worship's knowledge. Jack took no notice of what he said, but taking the poor creature, who was just sinking under the agitations of fear, joy, and gratitude, by the hand—'Cheer away, 'sister, sister,' said he, 'cheer away: we'll bring up 'all this lee way the next trip. Damn my eyes and 'limbs if I'll see a brother seaman's family at short 'allowance, while I have a shilling. Come, heave 'a-head; I'll rig and victual you and your children, 'against your husband comes, to man you for a 'voyage home. I'll swing my hammock in the next 'birth, and you shall cook the kettle, while I stay 'ashore.' Saying which words he led her off in triumph. This the clerk told his worship, when he came in to supper, giving him one of the guineas, as his share of the composition.

I now thought the business of the day over, and was preparing to take a view of my new master's heart, while he and his clerk were enjoying their success over an hearty bottle. But I was prevented by an accident, which disturbed for a while, and had like to have entirely broken off, this harmony between them; a dispute, like those between all conquerors, arising about the division of the spoil, and the merits in the acquisition of it.

'This will do,' said his worship, clapping his hands a-kimbo, after a full glass, 'this will do! what be-'tween the bawd in the morning, and the highway-'man in the afternoon, we have made a noble day of 'it! But what have you ordered about that fellow?

'I hope you have taken care that we may have him 'ourselves next.' 'Never fear,' replied the clerk, 'I have done for him: I have sent people to *lay* all 'the roads he can go, from the inn where he ordered 'his horse; and *plausible Tom* is fixed there to 'scrape an acquaintance with him, so that he cannot 'escape.'

'Aye, let Tom alone to manage him; many a cun-'ning fellow's heart has that Tom crept into, till he 'has wheedled him to Tyburn! Not a lawyer of 'them all has a smoother tongue. But did not I 'improve the hint of his madness well? How 'quietly the gudgeon swallowed it! Had I set 'about it, I believe in my soul, I could have per-'suaded him out of his own senses, and made him 'think himself mad, as well as the highwayman: 'ha! ha! ha! though you were not quite clear 'enough in your note; you should have told me all 'the particulars; I was often at a loss; but upon 'the whole, I think I did pretty well; pretty well, I 'think.'

'Why, aye, you did manage it pretty well when I 'had given you the *cue*, and so might any one have 'done. But how would you have contrived to bring 'him off, if I had not made that hit?'

'How?—why, easily enough! I would have—— 'But what have you done with the bank-note? Let 'me see that.' 'The note! It is safe enough. But 'you do not tell me how you would have managed 'to have earned it; I think you should do that be-'fore you ask for it.' 'How I would have earned 'it? Why, pray, good Sir, do you know whom you 'talk to in this manner?' 'Whom I talk to? I talk 'to the worshipful justice, whose betters I have

'talked to before now; and who would not have 'asked me that question some years ago, when he 'applied to me to instruct him in the business of his 'office?' 'Insolence! Instruct me! I'll make 'you know, Sir, that I understand my business with-'out your instruction. I'll take another clerk to-'morrow.' 'With all my heart! good master jus-'tice; with all my heart! and see who will be the 'loser by that. If you do not know it yet, you will 'soon learn then, whether the business comes to the 'justice or his clerk, for I give you notice, that I 'shall take all the *people* with me; you shall have 'the credit of making a new *set* for yourself, I assure 'you.'

'Very fine, very fine treatment this!' 'Why do 'you deserve it then, Sir, if you do not like it? I 'say very fine treatment too! that you should take 'upon you to undervalue my skill, and assume the 'credit of it to yourself; you, whom I first taught, 'and still support in your office, in despite of all 'your blunders! As for the bank-note, here it is, 'and here it shall be, till we have settled the ac-'count of the last sessions, when you were so clever 'upon me, sending me on a fool's errand out of the 'way, while you took up the reward. Perhaps you 'thought I did not see through your design, or that 'I was afraid to speak of it; but you were quite 'mistaken; I only waited till the remedy should 'come into my own hands, and now it has, be 'assured I shall make use of it, whatever you may 'think, Sir? And farther let me tell you, that if you 'say much more, I will think of parting in earnest, 'if you do not think proper to come to a new agree-'ment; for I see no reason why you should carry 'off two thirds of the profit only because you are '*justice*, indeed, though I do all the business!

CHAPTER XXXI.

The breach happily made up by the arrival of company. The evening concluded in character. His worship goes next morning to hear a charity sermon, and from thence to eat a charity feast, where Chrysal enters into a new service. Some account of the nature of a charity feast.

MATTERS were now at such an height, that I every minute expected they would have proceeded from words to blows, when a ring at the bell brought them both to themselves in an instant.

'Ah! that is true! this is quarter-night,' said the justice, 'and here the ladies are come! give me 'your hand: why should we fall out about our skill, 'when the business goes on well? Here's my ser-'vice to you; and let there be no more of it.'

With all my heart!' replied the clerk; 'but 'why will you urge me on thus, when you know 'that I cannot bear to have my skill called in ques-'tion.'

By this time the ladies entered, whom I directly saw to be the *commode* matrons, and compliant fair, of this district, who came duly to compound with him, for the breach of those laws he was appointed to support.

The very mention of this scene sufficiently explains the nature of it, and makes a more particular description unnecessary. All parties behaved properly on the occasion. *They* paid their subsidies, for which he returned them very wholesome advice, to behave with diligence and discretion in their professions; and especially those who lived in his neighbourhood, he cautioned to avoid all riots and causes of offence, which might bring his connivance and protection into suspicion; then relaxing from the severity of his morals, he gave up the rest of the night, and a good part of the next morning, to mirth and good fellowship, in the company of a few of his particular favourites, and best customers of this motley set, having dismissed the rest to the pursuit of their occupations.

The business of the day, and pleasures of the night, had so far exhausted his spirits, that nature required a long pause: accordingly, no business coming in to disturb him, (for such was his vigilance in his office, and care for the public, that every thing gave way to that) he made a late morning, not waking till he was called to attend a sermon and dinner, which were to be that day, for the benefit of a charity, to which he was a constant benefactor; as indeed his public spirit made him to all that were already established, and prompted him to strike out many new; in which, as the author of them, he hoped to have the management, while novelty should make it the fashion to support them.

But in this he was always disappointed. For though, in the multitude of his schemes, he sometimes stumbled upon a good one, yet his head was so confused, and his notions so wild and immethodical, that before he could digest his plans into any regu-

larity, some one else took up the hint, and ran away with the credit of the design.

At church he *edified* greatly, by a comfortable *nap*, during the sermon, which finished his refreshment, and sent him with a clear head, and keen stomach, to the feast, where every person seemed to vie in demonstrating his attachment to the cause of their meeting, by the quantity he eat and drank.

I here changed my service once more, being given by his worship to the subscription, and so came into the possession of a community in general, which gave me an opportunity of seeing the human heart in a more complicated view, than perhaps any other scene of its actions could afford; as there was hardly a profession, degree, or rank of life, which had not a representative in this meeting; nor a motive of action, however apparently contrary to its design, or contradictory to each other, which did not contribute its influence to the bringing them together.

While I lay in the hands of the treasurer of the charity, unassigned to any particular use, or person, I enjoyed a state of liberty; something like that of living in a commonwealth, having it in my power to enter into the hearts of all the governors (who were now my owners) as I liked, and to make any observations, without restraint to any particular person, time, or place.

Charity is the most amiable and most exalted of the human virtues, and that which rises to the nearest imitation of the divine. Nor can any thing be a stronger proof of the benificence of the author of the human nature, than his placing this virtue, which is

the perfection of it, within the reach of every individual.

For charity is a disposition to think well of, and do well to, every other human being, without partiality, prejudice, or respect to any other motive, than this universal duty; giving of alms being no more than one, and that perhaps the very meanest effect of it.

But this extensiveness of the nature of charity is the reason of its being generally misconceived, and most erroneously confined to this effect by minds unable to comprehend its greater excellence; and, from this mistake, have proceeded many of the extraordinary instances of this effect of charity, which distinguishes the present age.

This is a most dangerous error; it is too like thinking to bribe heaven with the wages of hell; and yet, profanely absurd as such a notion is, daily observation shews the extensive prevalence of it.

As charity is such a refined and exalted virtue, and purely scriptural, it must appear strange to you how it should enter into the head of man, to make so gross, dull, and sensual a passion as eating, the foundation of it! Indeed, so unnatural is the thought to pure speculation, unacquainted with the perversions of life, that a charity feast, in the literal meaning of the phrase, must be taken for a meeting of the poor, to eat the provisions supplied for them by the rich, instead of the rich meeting to gorge their own appetites.

But a little observation on the present bias of the world will solve this difficulty. Of all the *natural*

appetites and passions, which possess that part of mankind, whose age has enabled them to amass money enough to give away, eating is the most universal. I say natural passions, for fraud, avarice, or ambition, or even lust, at that time of life, are not the passions of nature.

To gratify this, therefore, was the most probable scheme for drawing them together: and, when that is sufficiently done, the full heart opens easily, and shares its abundance with the empty.

CHAPTER XXXII.

A representation of the company. The history of one of the principal members. The modern method of bribing heaven with the wages of hell.

*THEY had feasted, nor did their minds yet require such another banquet,** when I became a member of their society; you must not expect a particular account or description of such a scene. A few general hints must satisfy your curiosity, as I have told you on other occasions.

Let your imagination represent to you a number of people, whose highest pleasure is eating, seated at a large table, covered with all the delicacies, all the rarities of the season, in a plenty that promised satiety to the keenest appetites. But I must stop!

* Homer.

I see the very thought has an effect upon you, that savours too strongly of sensuality, and might, if not checked, put a stop to our conversation, by some human hankerings. Let us therefore pass over such a scene, and turn our observation to the company as they sat after the fragments of the feast were removed. And here it will be proper to have recourse to the expedient we made use of before, and, holding up the mirror to imagination, view the whole scene as if actually present.

Observe, then, that enormous bulk of flesh, that sits at the head of the table, with his waistcoat all unbuttoned, and gasping for breath; the distention of his stomach having left his lungs scarce room to perform the animal functions, and his fat almost choked the passages of vital air.

He is one of the principal supporters of this and every other public charity, founded on the modern method of a feast; the natural avarice of his heart outwitting itself in this instance; for as he is sure of satiating his appetite with more and better victuals and wine, at these meetings, than he could have at home for much more than the price of the ticket, the advantage of that bargain always tempts him to go; and then the happiness of his heart, in the fulness of his stomach, opens his purse, and he subscribes with a liberality that arises almost to profusion.

But look into his heart, and read the rest of his life: the very money which he bestows with such an appearance of virtue, on this best of uses (for no error in motive, or manner, must take off the merit of an action that does good) this very money, I say, has perhaps been acquired by vices the most opposite to the virtues it is applied to.

The greatest frugality, application, and skill, in the mysterious business of a scrivener, have raised this person from the most abject poverty, to affluence, above the moderation of a rational wish. But so powerful is the force of habit, that though the cause has been long since removed, the effect still remains, and he persists to save and heap up money, by all the mean and iniquitous ways which want first suggested to him. One instance, and that not singular in him, will give you a sufficient insight into his character.

A gentleman whom indiscretion and indolence of temper had involved in some pecuniary distresses, had the greater misfortune, some years ago, to be recommended to this person, to borrow such a sum of money as should extricate him from his immediate difficulties on a mortgage of his estate.

As his security was good, his business was soon done; but the convenience of his estate to another which the person had lately purchased in his neighbourhood, and an acquaintance with the unwary easiness of his disposition, made him cast a wishful eye upon it, and form schemes for getting it absolutely into his possession.

At first he strove to tempt his indiscretion by the offer of more money to supply his pleasures; but finding that would not take, and that the sense of his former extravagances dwelt so strongly on him, as to give his mind a kind of turn to industry, did he know how to apply it, his ready genius struck out a method, that he imagined could not fail of success.

He therefore cultivated an intimacy with the gentleman, in which, upon all occasions, he affected to

boast of his own success in life, and to attribute it to his having always a command of money to take the advantage of any bargain that might offer.

As this turn of conversation seemed to flow only from the fulness of his heart, and to be free from all design, it had the effect he proposed, and raised a desire in his friend to follow a method which had been so successful with him. He therefore one day communicated to him a resolution which he had formed of selling his estate, and applying the money to business; and desired his friend's assistance to execute his design. After an appearance of surprise, the scrivener testified his pleasure and approbation of his prudence, by the readiness with which he undertook to serve him.

The ease with which the first part of his scheme had succeeded, made him form further hopes, and think of getting the estate he desired even at a cheaper rate than purchasing it.

After some time spent, as he said, in fruitless inquiries for a purchaser, he most artfully drew his friend to desire that he would buy it himself: at first he seemed to hesitate, but then, as it were, yielding to the impulse of his friendship, he concluded a bargain for it, on terms evidently advantageous to the seller.

All things being agreed upon, the parties met to conclude the affair; when the writings being read over, and the money lying on the table, while the scrivener told it, the gentleman executed the deeds of conveyance, and receipt before proper witnesses, who withdrew as soon as they had signed them.

In the mean time the scrivener continued to tell the money, till a servant entered hastily with a letter, as from a lord, who was one of his best clients, and desired to see him that moment. The difficulty this threw him into was soon solved by his friend's compliance to defer his business for a few hours, as the lord's urgency would not admit the least delay. Accordingly, he put up both the deeds and money, in all the apparent confusion of hurry, and went away to his lordship.

Next morning the gentleman called to receive the price of his estate, but his friend was not at home, nor to be spoken with in the afternoon, for his turn was now served, and he neither desired, nor perhaps thought it safe, to keep up any farther acquaintance with him.

As such things might happen to a man in business, the gentleman took no notice of them, but quietly swallowed the same excuses for some days successively. At length his patience began to be exhausted, and his fears alarmed at a behaviour so strange, and contrary to that height of intimacy that had subsisted between them, even where there was no business in the case.

In this perplexity he went one morning, resolving not to quit the house till he should see him, and when a message to that purpose was, after long attendance, complied with, upon a warm expostulation, he received for answer, from his *friend*, that, 'He 'had been of late too much engaged in affairs of 'consequence to attend compliments, and knew not 'any business he could have with him.'

'Not know my business sir,' replied the gentle-

man in astonishment, 'I come, sir, for my money, 'and shall hereafter never trouble you more with 'business or compliment.'—'Your money, sir! I do 'not understand you: Pray, sir, what money do you 'mean?'—'What money! the purchase money of 'my estate, sir, which you were to have paid me 'above a week ago, when I signed the deeds of sale' —'poor gentleman, it is so! as I was informed, and 'always feared. He has lost his reason, and I 'should not seem much better to trust myself longer 'with a man in his condition.'—'Take care, sir, this 'is too tender a point to be trifled with: you almost 'make me mad!'—'Aye, there it is: he is mad, poor 'man, and is even sensible of it himself!'—'Death, 'sir, do not dare to dally with me a moment longer! 'answer me directly! pay me my money! and do not 'really provoke me to a madness that may be fatal to 'us both.'—'Sir, your madness, or reason, is nothing 'to me: however I will answer you directly, that I 'owe you no money, and none will I pay you. As 'for the purchase money of your estate, your parting 'with which I see has turned your brain, when you 'come to yourself, you will recollect that I paid it 'to you when I executed the deeds of sale; or if 'you do not remember it, your own receipt, properly 'witnessed, will prove it for me, and I desire no 'more: and therefore, sir, let me have no further 'trouble with you, if you do not choose to take up 'your lodgings in Moorfields.'

'This is too much; Just heaven! this is too 'much: too much for human patience to endure! or 'wait the law's delay for remedy! I will avenge 'myself, assert the cause of justice, and rid the 'groaning world of such a monster!' (exclaimed the unhappy gentleman) now really irritated into the extremity of that frenzy which the other only wanted

to impose upon him, and drawing his sword, before the wretch could call for help, or take any method of defence, he plunged it through his body.

His shrieks soon alarmed his servants, who, rushing in, found him weltering in his blood, and the madman smiling, in the absence of frantic ecstacy, over him, and incapable of attention to any other circumstance, though some of them dragged him before a magistrate, while the rest were busied in procuring relief for their master.

The madman was committed to prison, to wait the event of the wound he had given, which heaven, to let the measure of the scrivener's iniquity be full, had directed to a part where it was not mortal.

In a word, he recovered, though not to a sense of justice or humanity, but persisting in his iniquity, which now was sharpened by a spirit of revenge, for what he had endured, the first effort of his health, was to have the unhappy sufferer confined in Bedlam, where he still languishes under all the horrors that attend a total loss of reason, without relief or even compassion, from his base undoer; who, this very morning, as he was stepping into his chariot, to come to this *charity feast*, spurned from him with his foot, and refused the smallest alms to the wretched wife of the ruined madman, who begs in the common streets, and was driven, by misery and despair, to throw herself even at his feet, to implore relief.

I see your abhorrence rise at such a monster, but how will wonder even heighten it, when I tell you, that this oppressor has neither child, nor kinsman to inherit his wealth: for he was himself a foundling, and reared at the public expense, without the know-

ledge or tenderness of a parent, to soften his rugged soul; nor would the selfishness of his heart ever permit him to marry, for fear of the expense of a family; but he is this moment meditating on some ostentatious scheme of charity, to the foundation of which, he designs to dedicate the wealth which he has amassed by such villanies.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

Continued: the history of a general almoner. His method of making charity begin at home. He converts a noted bawd, but disappoints his designs, by too great confidence in his own skill. The character of a clergyman.

MOVE your eye to the left, and view that demure-looking picture of devotion, who sits there in silence, lifting up his eyes to heaven, and sighing in spirit, at the festivity and sensual conversation round him.

Who, that can see no deeper than outward appearances, would not think that man sincere in his professions of religion and virtue? whereas, in truth, he is the most abandoned contemner of both; and deepens the dye of his blackest crimes by the most hardened hypocrisy, secretly living on the practice of those very vices, of which he professes the greatest abhorrence.

With all that consequence, which he assumes in the direction of this charity, on the merit of the largeness of his subscription to it, in reality, he is but the dispenser of other people's benefactions, into whose good opinion he so insinuates himself, by his pretended piety, that they entrust their charity to his disposal, who always pays himself for his trouble, by subducting largely, from the sums confided to him. For, as real charity vaunteth not itself, they never divulge the secret, completely imposed on by his address, that never lets one half of his contributors know of the other; by which management, as the sums he gives are always made public, for example and imitation, each thinks that *he* adds most liberally to his own donation. But this is not the only method by which he turns his piety to advantage. The access which the reputation of it gains him in almost every family, opens to him an opportunity of carrying on the deepest intrigues, and becoming a pander for vices both natural and unnatural, which the interest of the parties concerned makes them still keep secret. As for the former, the mystery of that trade has been in part explained already; and the letter is too horrible for explanation. I shall therefore pass over those scenes, and conclude my account of this extraordinary personage, with one instance of his address, in finding out and managing the weak side of superstition and vice.

In the course of his love negotiations, he had made an acquaintance with a woman who kept a public *bagnio*, or house of prostitution, which acquaintance mutual interest cemented into an intimacy. In this most infamous trade had this woman amassed considerable wealth, the disposal of which (after her death) took up much of her thoughts, in those

moments, when the consequences of her debauched life forced her to think of dying.

As the secrets of their trade had removed every reserve from between them, she often used to consult him upon this head; when he always comforted her with dissertations upon religion and virtue, stripping them of the vain incumbrances of priestcraft, and bringing them back to their genuine principles of benevolence and charity.

Frequent inculcations of this doctrine had the effect he designed; the matron was pleased with the thought of having all the benefit of religion, without the trouble of the practice, and immediately began to exercise her donations to public charities, which, as it was not quite so much in character for her to offer in person, while she continued her profession, and she saw no necessity, nor felt inclination to quit that, she always confided to the distribution of her spiritual guide.

Nor did his success stop here; he improved his influence on her superstition so far, that he prevailed on her to compound with heaven for the vices of her life, by bequeathing the earnings of them to its use, after her death.

For this purpose he himself drew her will, which pious application of her fortune, set her conscience at ease; and she continued her usual business to the hour of her death, which happened three years after, with such care and industry, that some instance of negligence in one of her servants administering to the pleasure of her guests, gave her such uneasiness in her last moments, that, with her dying breath, she

lamented the ruin her house must come to, after she should quit the care of it, for the joys of heaven.

You must not think that his design extended no farther than to prevail on her to make such a will; he had drawn it himself, as I have told you, and took care to word it in such a manner, as he thought should give him, under the appearance of her executor and trustee, as she designed him, a real property in her wealth; as it was immediately to come into his hands, on her death, and there was no time appointed for the fulfilling her pious intentions.

But here his sagacity disappointed itself; for, neglecting to take proper advice, or afraid of making any person privy to his designs, he had committed such *material* errors in the *form* of the will, as gave room to learned counsel to set it aside, in favour of the heir at law, her nephew, who, from cleaning shoes under a gateway, was enriched with at least a third part of his aunt's fortune, which remained to him, after the costs of the suit that had been carried on for him, *in formâ pauperis*, while her executor had the vexation of disappointment aggravated by a decree *to pay all the cost*. This was a severe stroke: but it did not break his spirit, though it obliged him to return to his former occupation of an *almoner*, which you see he pursues with that attention which always insures success.

I see you sink under the pain of finding the best actions debased, by springing from such motives; but be careful to avoid an error, fatally too prevalent, of concluding from the abuse, against the use of any thing that may, in its end, be conducive to good.

These instances I have given; and I could add many more; not to depreciate the custom of giving to public charities, which is the noblest use of wealth; but to caution you against the dangerous error of thinking, that such giving alone, without reformation of life, and the active practice of the other virtues, can be acceptable in the sight of him to whom it is offered, or efficacious to procure his favour: and to shew the absurd impiety of persisting in vice, with a vain hope of bribing heaven with the wages of hell.

But to relieve your pain, behold that venerable person who sits opposite to him; the serenity of whose looks shews the happiness of his mind. Read his heart, and you will not find one discontent or sorrow there, but what humanity imprints for the distresses of his fellow-creatures, which his beneficence, his real charity, is for ever finding methods to relieve, not only by pecuniary benefactions, though to these is devoted the far greater part of his ample fortune, but also by his advice, instruction and good office, the judicious application and sincerity of which makes them very rarely fail of success. He is a real supporter of charity in its most extensive sense; his example giving a sanction, a seal of virtue, to every thing he appears in, which puts wicked wit out of countenance, and stops the tongue of calumny; and is (even were it alone) sufficient to counterbalance all the instances which could be brought against it. His long life, which has been extended by heaven, as a blessing to mankind, has been a constant illustration of the religion he teaches; not one instance of his actions ever contradicting his profession, as near as human weakness can act up to divine perfection.

Such is this clergyman! such should all clergymen be, to preserve the purity, the dignity of a function, whose rules are drawn from perfection, and calculated to prepare the human for a participation of the divine nature; to accomplish which greatest end, all profession, not enforced by practice, must be ineffectual.

To mention any one instance of his good works would be doing injustice to the rest, and contradicting the desire of his heart, which next to doing good, is to conceal what he does, his actions being so far from ostentation, that to heaven only, and the parties themselves, are they revealed; nor to these even is the hand that reaches them the blessing always known.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

Continued: The history of a bear-leader. His method of making his pupil's masters earn their money. The general consequence of close friendships between the different sexes. He modestly offers his pupil's mother a nut almost too hard for her liquorish tooth: but she swallows it whole, to save the trouble of mumbling, and meets a just return for her untimely passion.

OPPOSITE to him, you see a man, whose rich dress and supercilious carriage give him the appear-

ance o a superioity to all the rest of the company; but such artifices impose only upon the ignorant and vulgar: to a judicious eye they aggravate the defects they are meant to disguise; and the low-bred avaricious wretch appears doubly contemptible, through the unnatural veil of pride and munificence.

There is something so whimsically singular in the story of this person, that I will gratify your curiosity with a short sketch of it.

He was born in the lowest class of the people, in a poor village, in one of the most remote parts of the kingdom: but the delicacy of his constitution making him unfit for a life of labour, the common lot of his condition, his poor parents denied themselves almost the necessaries of life to send him to school, to qualify him for some employment better suited to his natural imbecility. The master of the school, who was a person of discernment and good nature, soon perceived that the weakness of his body was amply made up by the abilities of his mind, and took a pleasure in giving instruction which he saw received with advantage. Nor did he stop here; but, when his pupil had made the ordinary progress of the school, he used the persuasive argument of teaching him for nothing, and supplying him with books at his own expense, to prevail upon his parents to let him pursue his studies.

When he had advanced by this assistance, considerably beyond the usual boundaries of school-education, being not only critically skilled in the learned languages, but also well grounded in the principles of the liberal sciences, his kind master crowned the benefits he had conferred upon him, by recommending him warmly to a widow lady, of large fortune, to

educate her only son, whom female fondness would not permit her to trust out of her sight at a public school.

In this employment he behaved himself with such circumspection and care (for the weakness of his constitution saved him from all danger of excess, and the horrors of returning to his former poverty and distress, fixed his attention, invariably, to every possible means of advancing his fortune), that he won the confidence of his pupil's mother so far, that she ventured to send her darling son to the university in his care; and when he had finished his studies there with credit, gave him a genteel stipend, to accompany him in his travels to the different courts of Europe, to complete an education so happily begun, and enable him to make a figure in life, suitable to the affluence of his fortune.

The unbounded confidence with which this trust was committed to him, gave him sufficient opportunities of gratifying the ruling passions of his heart, vanity and avarice, as it enabled him to secrete, to his own use, as much as he pleased of his pupil's fortune, satisfied that his accounts would never be examined; and to acquire, late as it was, the ornamental parts of education, which his original poverty, and the necessary gravity of his literary life and employment had precluded him from.

Accordingly, as soon as he arrived in Paris, the first place where he designed to make any delay, he suffered himself to be prevailed upon by his pupil, to remit something of the strictness of his authority, and, seemingly, winked at his plunging into all the levities and excesses of unguarded youth, that he might have the more convenient opportunity for

executing his own schemes. Thus, while his abused charge threw away the time he ought to have spent in receiving profitable information and improvement, in idle expense and vicious pleasures, the prudent tutor took the advantage of his absence, to attend the masters he retained for him, and learn dancing, fencing, music, and all the other accomplishments of polite education; a conduct which he carefully observed, in all the different stages of their travels. But still his labour, as you see, was for the most part in vain, the rust of his mean original being too strongly confirmed, to be worn off by so late application, so that his awkward affectation only makes defects, which would otherwise have passed unnoticed, become more visible, and exposes him to contempt and ridicule.

But, eager as he was in these favourite pursuits, he did not let them divert his attention from the main point, of continuing to cultivate the good opinion and confidence of his pupil's mother, to whom he constantly wrote in such a strain of piety, and gave such pleasing accounts of her son's conduct, expatiating on his good qualities, and palliating his failings, with the tender titles of youthful levity, and the frailty of nature (for fear she should receive information of his excesses from any other person) that she thought herself happy in having placed him under a man of such virtue and goodness; her opinion of which was not a little heightened by the care he took of his parents, to whom he constantly remitted, through her hands, such a portion of his stipend, as enabled them to live with comfort; and with his former master he kept up a regular correspondence, informing him of every thing he saw in his travels, that he thought would be agreeable and entertaining to him, and

expressing his gratitude for the friendship which had advanced him so happily in life.

When his pupil had finished his travels in this manner, they returned home, where the fond mother received them with the highest joy, her esteem for the tutor almost equalled her love for her son. But this natural affection did not long maintain the pre-eminence! Her established opinion of the understanding, learning, and virtue of the former, levelled the height from which difference of condition had made her look down upon him before, and she admitted him into all the intimacy of friendship. There is nothing more deceitful than connections of this kind between the different sexes. Let them be formed with whatever resolution they will, at first, nature will insensibly take the alarm, and force the execution of her most powerful laws.

This intimacy had not been long cultivated before the lady began to see perfections in her new friend, which she had never perceived before, and to feel a pleasure in his conversation which her heart had long been a stranger to. She knew not how it was, but nothing pleased her except what he said, or did: even her fondness for her son began to cool, and her eyes to open to faults in him, which she had always been blind to before, though he had never taken any pains to conceal them from her. This did not escape the penetration of her friend a moment, nor was his judgment at a loss how to improve it to the best advantage. He immediately began to assume a timid tenderness in his looks and manner, and took every occasion of displaying the genteel accomplishments he had acquired in his travels, while her unhappy son, as if he had entered into the scheme against

himself, seldom came near her, and when he did, behaved with a careless indifference, scarce short of rudeness and insult.

Such a contrast was too striking to pass unnoticed: nor did her friend fail to aggravate the impressions of it, by doubling his assiduity and tender complaisance, whenever his former pupil withdrew, and lamenting the unhappy turn he had taken in terms of the deepest concern, but without ever offering a word in his excuse.

This subtle conduct had the desired effect: the love of the mother was entirely diverted from her son to her friend; and as the foolish fondness of her deceased husband had left much the greater part of his large fortune in her power, the improvement of this change was an object worthy of his highest attention. But still the difficulty upon both was, how to open the affair; for, powerful as the different motives that urged them to bring it to a conclusion were, a sense of the impropriety of such an action, made them equally at a loss how to mention it.

But here again the evil genius of the son prevailed, and he did that for them which they knew not how to do themselves. For some of his friends observing the intimacy between his mother and his former tutor, desired him to be upon his guard, and strive to prevent the consequences of it, by a change in his behaviour to her. Such prudent advice, if properly followed, might probably have had effect. But instead of that, he flew immediately to his mother, and indiscreetly charged her with a design of betraying the confidence of his father, and ruining him, to gratify a ridiculous passion for a mean unworthy object; and then turning to him, who happened to

be present, he told him fiercely, that, if he did not that instant quit his mother's house, he would treat him as the villany of such a design deserved, in the next place he should ever meet him; and so flung out of the room in the highest rage, leaving them staring at each other, and almost petrified with astonishment.

But a few moments restored them to themselves! The affair was now revealed, and so the greatest difficulty over. 'I wish,' said the tutor, as if he spoke to his former pupil, though he took care to wait till he heard him out of the house: 'I wish no other 'person beside *me* had reason to fear your resent-'ment; or that I had no other obstacle but that, to 'prevent the happiness my heart languishes for.' And then turning to the lady, as if he did not know that she had heard what he had said, 'I am most unhappy, 'madam,' proceeded he, 'to find myself the cause of 'your being treated in this manner, and shall imme-'diately withdraw to prevent a repetition of it; as 'for me, since I am to lose the happiness of your 'conversation, it matters not what becomes of me!'— Saying which, he made her a most respectful bow, and with a look of the highest tenderness and grief, seemed to prepare to leave the room.

'Hold, Sir,' exclaimed the lady, the warmth of whose resentment at her son's behaviour made her the more readily melt at the distress of her lover. 'Hold, Sir! what are you going to do? Will you 'desert me in this danger and distress?' And then softening her voice and looks into the greatest tenderness, 'I thought,' continued she, 'I should never 'want a protector while my friend lived.'—'Nor 'shall you, madam,' answered he with an appearance of warmth that banished all reserve. 'My life

'shall protect you from every danger and affront. 'But,—oh, that I had a tie to justify such an attach-'ment to the world, which else will censure it 'severely.' And then, taking her hand, he bent his knee, and pressed it to his lips.

Such an act of gallantry was not to be resisted, in the condition she was then in. She bent forward to meet him, and laying her head upon his bosom as he arose,—'Let it be justified,' she murmured in a broken faultering accent, 'by every sacred tie of love and truth; of honour and religion!'—This was all he wanted. He seized her in his arms, and pressing her to his breast, sealed the contract on her trembling, withered lips.

The impatient love-sick fair, now thought every obstacle to her wishes removed, and therefore distantly proposed sending for a priest directly, to tie the sacred knot, and prevent any designs her undutiful son might form to disappoint her happiness. But her prudent lover was in no such haste! He now had her secure, beyond danger of retreating; but as her person was not the only object of his desires, he wisely judged it best to refrain, a few moments, from the possession of that, to secure the more solid enjoyment of her fortune; as he was not certain, but this fit of fondness might wear off, and her natural affection for her son return, when her untimely passion should be gratified. He, therefore, resolved to improve her present disposition beyond the danger of repentance, and sent for the priest directly, passing the intermediate moments till his arrival, in the most passionate, endearing dalliance.

But, just as the blushing, bashful bride was going to approach the altar, he stopped short, as if upon a

sudden thought, and turning to her, 'This, madam, 'secures our present happiness,' said he, 'but how 'are you to be revenged upon your base, ungrateful 'son? What certainty have I, that a return of your 'former fondness for him may not sacrifice me to his 'implacable resentment? Some settlement should 'first be made; and then anxiety and fear won't 'damp the ardour of our joys.' 'I understand you 'not!' answered she, in confusion and astonishment. 'What settlement can you mean? Do I not give 'you the possession of my fortune with myself?'— 'True, madam,' replied he, 'you do! And could I 'be sure of having them for ever, I should be satis- 'fied! But death may rob me of you, and then your 'fortune will descend to your ungracious son, while 'I am thrown upon the world, destitute of every 'means of self-defence and support.' 'And can 'you doubt my love?' added she, not a little sur- prised, and startled at his caution. 'I doubt it not! 'nor would I doubt it!' returned he, 'and therefore 'will remove all room for doubt.' 'What must I 'settle then?' said she. 'How much of my fortune 'will remove your fears, and satisfy your wishes? 'Here? take this paper, and write down your terms!' 'That is soon done!' said he, and taking the paper, directly wrote the word ALL, and reached it to her. It is not easy to describe her astonishment and indig- nation, at the assurance and unreasonableness of such a demand. 'What! ALL!' said she, with evident emotion, 'will no less do? Is nothing to be left to 'my disposal? This is too hard?' The lover in- stantly perceived his ticklish situation! However, he was resolved to try the utmost, assured, that even if her resolution held, he was in no danger of losing her quite. 'Madam,' said he, throwing his arms around her, and embracing her tenderly, 'I give 'you myself, and all I have; and I expect the like

'return: I pretend not to compare the value of the 'gifts; but love is delicate, and will bear no abate-'ment.'

If the passions of youth are impetuous, those of old age are silly! The ardour of this address, with shame of being refused upon any account, thus in the very crisis of her hopes, made her comply, and she betrayed the confidence of her husband, and signed away the inheritance of her child, to gratify a preposterous, untimely, ridiculous love.

The return she met with was just! Her new husband, now all his schemes were accomplished, scorned to preserve even the decency of appearance, but threw off the mask directly, and treated her with such indignity and contempt, that she broke from him in despair, in the first week of her marriage, and threw herself upon the mercy of her basely ruined son; whose resentment was not proof to such a trial, but, yielding to filial piety, he shared, with her, the poor pittance which he happily had independent of her, till she sunk under the weight of misfortune, shame, and remorse.

Nor did her husband treat his first benefactor, or his parents, better. With the former he directly dropped all correspondence; and, giving the latter an allowance of twenty pounds a-year, just to keep them from starving, he positively forbid their ever letting him hear from them more, on the penalty of forfeiting that, and every other instance of his favour.

Far from being satisfied with the success of his villany, or enjoying the fortune he had so basely obtained, his whole life has been spent, as you see, in anxious attempts to hide the meanness of his

original, under the splendour of his appearance; and the iniquity by which he acquired his wealth, by vain ostentation of charity and munificence.

CHAPTER XXXV.

Continued: Some reflections that may appear impertinent to many, and unprofitable to more, but still are neither improper nor unjust. The history of an honest attorney. More wonders! The way of the world reversed: Right triumphant over might; and gratitude shewn in high life.

MOVE your eyes towards the lower end of the table, and behold that person whose aspect and appearance command veneration and esteem. He was bred in a profession, the very name of which is become a reproach, from the abuse of unworthy professors. Nor can it be otherwise, while every low-bred person, who is just able to give a son the first rudiments of education, and ambitious of seeing him in the character of a gentleman, is admitted to breed him an attorney; and as soon as he has served a time, as to the most illiberal mechanic trade, to turn him loose upon the world, to live by the practice of the very crimes and iniquities which his profession was originally instituted to suppress, without any fortune to save him from the necessity of having recourse to such base means; and without being instructed in the principles of probity and virtue, to support him against the temptations of the many frauds and

villanies which his business brings him to the knowledge of: Nay, so far from giving any attention to this indispensible duty, of forming the mind by proper instruction, such is the perverseness of man, that if a child betrays an early propensity to chicane and fraud, by setting his play fellows together by the ears, and cozening them of their toys, he is immediately marked for this profession, and, instead of being corrected for such a disposition, and having it nipped in the bud, is encouraged in it, by hearing it made the omen and ground of his future success in life, till it is confirmed beyond the sense of shame and remorse, and becomes the ruling principle of his life. The conduct, consequent to such education and principles, has brought the profession into so great disrepute, that scarce any person of character or fortune will breed a son to it; by which means the evil is daily aggravated more and more, and threatens to become absolutely irremediable at last. For, at present, so many are the opportunities that tempt to iniquity in the practice, and so universal the reproach affixed to the very name of an attorney, that all regard to reputation, that powerful preservative of virtue, seems to be in vain, and it requires an uncommon rectitude of heart to support the conflict: but that there are some who are equal to this trial, and that the fault is not in the profession, but in the abuse of it, the person before us is an eminent instance.

A nobleman, who died some time since without legitimate issue, thought proper to bequeath, not only his own great acquisitions, but also the immense possessions of his ancestors, to a spurious son, without ever considering whether there might not possibly remain some distant branches of his family, capable of inheriting what they must have a just and legal title to, though the direct line failed in himself:

accordingly the heir took possession of his adventitious fortune; and, as wealth hides every defect, entered into alliance, and made connections with, persons of the most exalted rank, whose friendship and interest, supported by the immense riches he possessed, seemed to hold every inquiry into the justice of his title to them, in defiance.

But a generous heart is not easily terrified in a just cause: the person before us, by his knowledge in his profession, and the uprightness of his practice, had acquired a fortune, and established a character, that placed him above the reach of slander, and the frown of power. He had been born under the patronage of this nobleman's house, and in the course of his business, had happened to get some insight into the settlements of his family, by which he found, that it was not in his power to alienate the acquisitions of his illustrious ancestors, and give them to a stranger to their blood, while any of their descendants were in being. Such an act of injustice, therefore, raised the indignation and pity of his honest, generous heart, and he resolved to set it aside, notwithstanding the trouble and expense that must necessarily attend such an attempt.

The greatest discouragement to his undertaking, was the difficulty of finding out, and ascertaining the real heir, for the family was apparently extinct. But upon examining into the many alliances it had formerly made, which his known attachment gave him an easy opportunity of doing, he found, that some generations before, a daughter had been married to a nobleman of a neighbouring dependent kingdom; the issue of which marriage, if any remained, was the true, and only representative of this noble house.

Having made this discovery, he went directly over to that kingdom, where, after a long and painful search, he had the mortification to find, that the family was reduced, by the revolutions of government, and the calamity of the times, to two poor, low-bred, illiterate women, who had been married to mechanics of the meanest rank, and, being left widows, and without children, now strove to procure a wretched subsistence, by joining their poor stocks to keep a chandler's shop, in a city, in the remotest part of the kingdom.

So melancholy an instance of the instability of human grandeur, only raised his compassion, and confirmed his resolution to vindicate the blood of the illustrious patrons of his family, from such injustice and disgrace. Accordingly he instantly relieved their immediate distresses, and, taking all the proper methods for ascertaining their descent, brought them over to this kingdom, lodged them in his own house, and treated them with the respect due to their noble blood and better hopes.

As soon as every thing was prepared for the great attempt, he regularly demanded a restitution of their right from the unjust possessor, and, upon his expected refusal, instituted a suit at law for the recovery of it, in the prosecution of which, neither difficulties nor dangers, neither threats nor promises, could slacken his ardour, till he had obtained the justice he demanded for them. A detail of the proceedings, in such an affair, must be distressing to any humane heart. It is sufficient to say, that every method which the art of man could invent to impose upon judgment, and defeat justice, was exerted against him, for several years, in hopes of exhausting his fortune, and wearing out the lives of his injured

clients (the elder of whom actually did die during the suit), and so disappointing his hopes. But justice at length prevailed, and he recovered, for them, the inheritance of their ancestors, leaving their antagonist only the immediate acquisitions of his reputed father, which, large as they are, he eagerly labours to increase, by every artifice of sordid avarice.

As for the heiress, the exalted gratitude she shewed, proved her noble blood. As soon as she had executed all the forms of law necessary to give her an absolute power over her fortune, and justly paid the expense, and rewarded the trouble of recovering it, as every branch of her family was extinct, she thought it but justice to settle her great fortune upon the generous recoverer of it. Nor was she content with leaving it to him, when she could no longer make use of it herself, but obliging him to quit the business of his profession, she gave the greater part of it into his immediate possession, and, retiring to one of the principal seats upon her estate, spent the remainder of her life in happiness and esteem: the goodness of her heart, and the true nobleness of her soul, drowning her want of early education in the superior radiance of innate virtue.

The absolute possession of her entire fortune, which her death gave him much sooner than he wished, has made no alteration in the conduct of this worthy person, who invariably pursues the dictates of justice and benevolence in all his actions, making his wealth a blessing to all, whose wants and virtues mark them as objects worthy of his regard and assistance.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

Continued: The happy fruits of unequal marriages. A short way to pay long debts. The pleasures of polite life. A bold stroke of female genius triumphant over law and religion: an unlucky mistake brings an improper visitor into too genteel company.

IMMEDIATELY below him, you see one of those instances of inconsistency which diversify the motly character of man. In the deep sunk lines of his face you may read learning and intense thought, as the placid serenity of his eye shews an heart warmed with piety and moral virtue; what pity, that a listless indolence of mind throws a shade over so bright a character, and submission to the capricious yoke of female tyranny, make him passively guilty of the very follies and vices most immediately opposite to his own virtue and good sense!

The pious care of a good father had so improved the eminent abilities with which nature had blessed this gentleman, by the most judicious education, that the promise of his youth gave hopes of his being an ornament and advantage to his age and country; but one indiscreet action overcast this pleasing prospect; and in its consequences, has brought him to be the insignificant thing you see.

This was a marriage of mere inclination, with a person, who had neither fortune, beauty, nor merit, to justify his choice; and who yet has taken the unjustifiable advantage of this indolence of his temper, to usurp as absolute an authority over him, as if she possessed them all, in the most eminent degree, and conferred upon him the benefit and obligation she herself received.

This makes his life one scene of the most irreconcileable inconsistency, between the wisdom and virtue of the very few actions, in which he is admitted to follow the dictates of his own judgment, and the follies and vices, into which she wantonly leads him every moment of his life. When I say vices, I mean those of dissipation, luxury, and extravagance, which, though the most injurious to society, and productive of the worst consequences to particulars, are yet too often looked upon in another light, and thought harmless at least, if not even commendable exertions of greatness, and generosity of spirit, and the proper use of affluence of fortune; for, not content with the rational enjoyment of the fortune to which he raised her, in her proper sphere, she has assumed the absolute disposal of the whole, which she dissipates in every kind of fashionable folly and profusion, so as utterly to disable him from exerting the natural generosity and benevolence of his heart, in the extent and manner suited to his apparent wealth, and too often from discharging the moral obligations of honesty, in the payment of his just and necessary debts.

Such an ungrateful abuse of obligation and influence may appear strange to you, who have been so little conversant in the ways of men; but to a more extended view of life, constant observation shews, that conferring a great benefit actually extinguishes

gratitude, instead of raising it higher, and that the meaner the hands into which power is entrusted, the more exorbitant and tyrannical the use they make of it. Whether this arises from a consciousness of inability to pay so great a debt, and a consequent desire to cancel it, by an absolute breach, that may, at the same time, also support the debtor's pride, and seem to hide the obligation, by an implied disavowal in the former case, and from a desire of returning the tyranny felt before, in the latter, would be a curious, and not unprofitable disquisition, but shall be reserved to another place, where the occasion will illustrate it more forcibly; and only the justice of the observation, as to the present case in particular, proved by a few, out of innumerable instances of the same kind.

Of all the methods of dissipating wealth, and precipitating ruin, the most speedy and effectual is gaming. The present prevalence of the passion for this vice (for to call it by any other name would be a false tenderness) among all ranks and sexes, has been already often observed, as it is the characteristic of the times. However, to soften the horror, with which the barefaced practice of it, by the fairer sex, must strike every rational mind, it is blended with matters of mere amusement, and represented only as an innocent method of relieving conversation, when a number of persons meet in public company, which must otherwise languish and grow tiresome, or else fall upon improper subjects. This ingenious expedient has given rise to those meetings at the houses of the greatest fashion, which, from the noise, bustle, and confusion, inseparable from such crowds, are emphatically called *Routs*. In these, the mistress of the house always presides, and, consequently attendance at them is looked upon as a compliment pecu-

liar to her, and in which her husband has no share. For this reason, the greater the crowd collected, the more important the entertainer appears, and therefore no pains or expense is spared in inducing them to attend.

From the character already given of the wife of this gentleman, it may be concluded that she exerted all her efforts, to make a figure by the frequency and greatness of her own routs, and by the profusion with which she gamed away her money at those of others. However, the mode was become so universal, and so eagerly pursued, that she soon found it was impossible for her to distinguish herself in the manner she desired, if she could not strike out some new way; but in this she was not long at a loss, the boldness of her genius prompted her to try an expedient, which no one before her had dared to venture upon.

This was to fix her routs on the day set apart, by laws, human and divine, for the duties of religion, and which till then had been held sacred to these alone, from every kind of business and recreation. So bold a stroke necessarily attracted the notice of the public, and the remissness of the legislature overlooking it, the crowds who, from an insensibility to those duties, were utterly at a loss how to get rid of so much time, gladly embraced such an opportunity, and flocked to her in numbers, that amply satisfied her ambition. Such success and impunity soon made her example imitated; but, as she had led the way, the merit of that secured her from being supplanted by any rival, and having her company decoyed from her.

The circumstances of her husband's birth, and the principles in which he had been educated, made him

at first look upon such an insult upon religion with the strongest horror: but she made light of his scruples, and over-ruled all his objections, with such an absolute authority, that, for the sake of peace, he was obliged to submit, and join in what he dared not contradict; till he has at length forfeited the acquaintance of every serious, rational, and religious person.

He was, at first, greatly affected at this falling off, and much distressed to think what it could proceed from, as he was not sensible of any deviation, in his own sentiments, from the principles which had made his acquaintance sought by every man of sense and virtue; but an accident soon opened his eyes to the absurdity of his situation.

The acquaintance, on which he justly set the greatest value, was with a prelate of distinguished merit and virtue, an intimate friend of his deceased father. With him he spent the happiest hours of his life; and, in the wisdom and piety of his conversation, found relief for the sick heart, from the follies and riotous excesses which he was a slave to at home. Though he always met with the most benevolent and friendly reception from this worthy person, yet the coolness with which he found himself treated by some others, made his apprehension so ready to take alarm, that, upon his grace's not returning a visit or two, with the exactest punctuality, either from sickness, or some necessary engagement, he could not help expressing his uneasiness, with such warmth, when he went to see him next, that his grace, who, though he despised ceremony, would not give pain or offence to any person, especially one for whom he had so sincere an esteem, accounted for his late omission, by giving the real reason of it, and told him that he would do himself the pleasure of visiting him any

day, when he might be sure of finding him at home.

. . . . . .

The gentleman answered, that, if his grace would appoint any day agreeable and convenient to him, he should gladly break through all engagements, and attend to receive him. This was a strain of complaisance which the prelate would not agree to, but insisted upon knowing what day he was usually at home, when he would call upon him, in a friendly manner, without putting him to the trouble of waiting for him in particular.

The affectionate, sincere manner in which this was said, was so pleasing to the gentleman, that it put him entirely off his guard, and he answered eagerly, and without ever considering that the next day was Sunday, when he was always at home. This was strictly true; he was always at home on that day, because it was his lady's day for seeing company, if he had in the least reflected on which, he would never have appointed his grace to come, as he was sensible that he should for ever forfeit his acquaintance by it.

Though that was a day which the prelate dedicated to employments of a very different nature from paying complimentary visits, there was something in the earnestness of the manner in which the gentleman appointed it, that made him apprehend he had some secret uneasiness upon his mind, which he wanted to communicate, for assistance or advice; wherefore he complied without hesitation, nor did the other recollect the impropriety of what he had done, till it was too late to be remedied. For his grace going the next evening, as he had promised, was not a little surprised to find a crowd of coaches before the door,

for he had never heard of, nor suspected, the scene that was acting; but, however, being informed that his friend was at home, he thought it best to proceed, and so lighting from his chariot, was shewn up, into a room, where there was a mixed multitude seriously engaged at cards!

The very mention of such a scene would have struck him with horror, judge then what his sentiments must be at the sight; and particularly to be betrayed to it, as he imagined, on purpose to insult him, by a man whom he esteemed, and whose father he had sincerely loved.

As soon as he had recovered himself from his astonishment, he directly turned about, and departed, just as he was perceived by the master of the house, whose confusion at his own indiscretion, in appointing such a time, which he instantly recollected, is not to be described. He started from his chair, and exclaiming, 'Good God! what have I done?'—would have followed him directly, if his lady, with whom he was playing, and who was just then dealing, had not stopped him, and insisted on knowing what was the matter.

'Good God! madam,' said he, in the utmost confusion and distress, 'did not you see his grace come 'to the door this moment? I went to pay him a 'visit yesterday, and unfortunately engaged him to return it this evening, without ever considering that 'it was *your night*.' 'And is that all,' answered she, who had gone on with her deal, and just turned up an ace, 'then pray sit still, and play your cards; 'you see clubs are trumps! His grace may come 'at a proper time if he pleases.'

Great as the husband's distress was, the accent with which these words were spoken, nailed him to the chair; so that he was forced to let his grace go home, and remain that night in an opinion so painful and injurious to him. But he laid not his head at rest, till he had written his grace a letter of apology for his mistake, which he candidly acknowledged, and conjured him to forgive, in the most earnest manner.

The imaginary insult, of being trepanned into such a scene, had at first provoked his grace beyond the usual evenness of his temper; but he had had time to cool before he received the letter (for he never lay down in anger, nor arose but in charity with all mankind), and, reading it dispassionately, was so moved at the situation into which he found his friend fallen, that all thoughts of personal resentment vanished, and he answered it with the greatest humanity and tenderness, drawing the folly and danger of such a complaisance in its proper strength, and urging his return to the practice of his own principles, with every argument of reason, virtue, and religion, promising to renew his acquaintance with the same, or greater intimacy than before, as soon as he should desist from such an inpious profanation and abuse of a day made sacred to piety and devotion, by every civil and religious law: till he should do which, it was inconsistent with his character and principles to keep up any further intercourse with a person in such circumstances.

The justice of this reasoning was acknowledged by the person to whom it was addressed, and the loss, which followed the neglect of it, severely felt, but he wanted resolution to resume the authority that

was necessary for putting it in execution, and so tamely submits, against his better judgment, to all the impositions of a tyranny, which was first erected upon his folly, and still subsists by his indolence.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

Continued: confusion worse confounded, rout on rout: the transformation of a constable into a devil introduces a story of the devil's dancing in masquerade, and frightens a polite assembly into a fit of devotion, which lasts a whole night with most of them. A glimpse of the courage of a modern man of honour.

BUT, though such meetings as these are held in apparent defiance of the laws, you must not imagine, that those who go to them are insensible of the impropriety, or unapprehensive of the danger of such a conduct. By danger, I mean the immediate one, from the secular power, for that of the divine wrath they never gave themselves the trouble of thinking about.

Of this a remarkable instance happened at this place, not very long after the affair of his grace. A gentleman of humour, as well as reason, who was intimate in this gentleman's family, and had often strove in vain to convince his lady of the disagreeable consequences that might attend such an avowed

disregard to decency at least, resolved to take another method, and try what effect ridicule and shame might have, where every argument from reason had failed.

Accordingly, one night, in the midst of the riot, he contrived to have it whispered in the company, that a neighbouring *constable*, remarkable for punishing every offence, for which he did not receive a proper composition, intended to come with the church-wardens, and all the parish officers at his heels, and interrupt their diversion; and dressing himself exactly like the constable, whom he nearly resembled in size and figure, and buckling on a wooden leg, like him he stalks among them, just as the servant announced his coming, by the name of the constable, whom he personated.

It is impossible to describe the astonishment and confusion of the whole company at such an attack! Though there were several present, whose rank placed them above his authority, surprise and consciousness of their guilt so far deprived them of all resolution and presence of mind, that they joined in the just fear of the rest, and attempted to make an ignominious escape with them. The candles were all instantly put out, the windows were broke open, and stars and ribbons were seen among the crowd that leaped into the court, and ran through the streets, without regarding dirt or cold, while the more timorous sex stood petrified with fear, uncertain which to face, shame or danger.

In the mean time, the pretended constable took the advantage to slip off his wooden leg, tie-wig, and long cloke, just as the servants had taken the alarm,

and come in to see what was the matter, and so had an opportunity of enjoying the whole scene, without the danger of being suspected for the author of it.

The first question which the lady of the house, whose active spirit first recovered itself, asked, was, what was become of the constable, and who let him in? At the mention of a constable, the servants all started, as not one of them knew any thing of him; and the very servant, who had announced his entrance, declared he had never heard a word of him, for, as he had not told his office, not one of them had the least notion of such a person's presuming to come among them. But upon telling his name, and describing his appearance, their surprise was changed the other way; they all remembered his entrance, but every one of them positively insisted that he had not gone back; so that the question now was, what could have possibly become of him? as his leaping out of the window, as the others had gallantly done, was neither necessary, nor indeed possible for him to do, maimed as he was.

While they were forming sagacious conjectures on so strange and unaccountable an affair, the metamorphosed constable, who had joined in the conversation, said to an old lady, who seemed more strongly affected than any other of the company, that the oddness of this affair put him in mind of one, not very unlike it in many circumstances, which he had read, in accounts of good authority, to have happened in France, during the minority of Lewis XIV.

This raised the curiosity of all who heard him, who immediately crowded round him, and desired him to tell it. At first he seemed rather unwilling, and very gravely prefaced his story with declaring,

that for his part he believed nothing of the matter though he owned it was related by writers of undoubted veracity, and attested in a manner almost beyond any fact he had ever read in history. Having thus prepared them for something extraordinary, he proceeded thus: 'You know, Madam,' addressing himself to the old lady, to whom he had first mentioned it, and who he knew plumed herself not a little upon her knowledge in *secret* history, every thing that bore the name of which, she had read, and implicitly believed every word of; 'that, in the minority of 'Lewis the Great, Mazarine, who governed the king-'dom, took every method of diverting the attention 'of the young monarch from state affairs, by all kinds 'of pleasurable entertainment, that could be devised.' —'True, Sir,' answered the old lady, who could not restrain her desire of shewing her knowledge. 'And 'that is said to have influenced the conduct of his 'future life, in that expensive pomp and vain magni-'ficence, which attracted the admiration of fo-'reigners, while it exhausted and ruined his subjects. 'Hem! hem! but I beg pardon, Sir, pray don't let 'me interrupt you.'

'As this Mazarine was an Italian, you know, 'Madam,' continued he, to which she assented with a nod, as she constantly did, 'it was natural for him 'to have a fondness for the entertainments of his 'own country, he therefore introduced the Italian 'opera into France.—The first time it was presented, 'one of the principal parts of the entertainment con-'sisted of a comic dance, that was performed by six 'of the nimblest caperers in all Italy. At first they 'went on expertly, and with great applause; but 'immediately found themselves at a loss, and were 'unable to proceed any farther, being put out by the 'intrusion of a strange dancer, who came among

'them nobody could tell how, and disconcerted the 'entire scheme of their dance, which had been cal- 'culated only for their own number. This at length 'threw them into such confusion, that they were 'obliged to stand still! when the manager of the 'entertainment coming to them, to see what was the 'matter, perceived the cause of their confusion, and 'obliged them all to unmask, (for they were dressed 'exactly alike and wore masks) that he might detect 'and seize the impertinent intruder, when, to his, and 'to the utter astonishment of every one present, he 'vanished as unaccountably as he had come, though 'the eyes of the whole house were upon him, and 'there appeared to be no more than the original 'number, and the same persons, who began the 'dance. I believe, Madam, you may recollect the 'other circumstances of the story, which I do not 'choose to mention, on this occasion; they are told in 'the *secret memoirs* of cardinal Mazarine.'—'I do, 'Sir,' returned she, with great emotion, 'remember 'something of it. But really'—'Dear Madam,' interrupted another, whose curiosity was raised too high to bear a moment's delay, 'pray let the gentle- 'man proceed! When he has ended, if he omits any 'thing, you may then inform us farther. Pray, Sir, 'do proceed.'

'Why, really, madam,' continued he, under some apparent confusion, 'I am at a loss how to act, and 'had much rather be excused; however, I must beg 'leave to observe, that for my own part, I do not 'believe a single syllable of the stories of ghosts, 'and apparitions, and devils, and such like stuff, 'that ever were told, though this story, in particular, 'is told in a manner, and confirmed with circum- 'stances, not easily to be contradicted.'

This solemn preface raised the curiosity of them all to a torture, and alarmed apprehensions, that would not admit of a moment's suspense. 'Dear 'Sir, pray proceed,' echoed from an hundred mouths at once, as they pressed closer to him. The gentleman bowed and continued: 'The whole company 'was now thrown into a confusion, as great as that 'of the dancers: they had all reckoned a seventh 'person, and the connoisseurs, in particular, had 'observed that one of them had shewn greater agility, 'and *cut* higher, than any one they had ever seen 'before, and indeed than they thought it possible for 'any human person to do. This hint alarmed the 'whole house, and it was immediately concluded 'that the devil had maliciously joined in the dance, 'on purpose to spoil their sport; an opinion, which 'one or two unlucky circumstances seemed to give 'weight to, which were, that all the dancers had 'been dressed like devils, the opera being *The Fall 'of Man*, and the dance exhibited, as a triumph of 'the devils upon the occasion, that it was acted on a '*Sunday evening*. Trifling as these circumstances 'really were, they threw the whole audience into a 'consternation; some directly fancied the candles 'burnt blue, others that the place smelt strongly of 'sulphur; and one more impudently foolish than all 'the rest, insisted that he had observed the *cloven* 'foot; but, what was most surprising of all, the 'cardinal, who could not be suspected of superstition, was so affected by it, that he ordered the house 'to be dismissed directly, and that opera never to be 'performed again, nor any other on a *Sunday*, which 'was observed during his life, and for some time 'after.'

It is impossible for words to describe the situation

of the company, at the conclusion of this story. At the mention of the candles burning blue, all turned their eyes about, and fancied the same; as to their smelling sulphur, it was more than imagination, the pretended constable having taken an opportunity, while they were all in confusion, to throw, unperceived, a composition which he had brought with him on purpose, into the fire, which had filled the room with a most sulphureous smell, and more than one of the company declared, *they thought* they saw a cloven foot, or something very like it, fly out of the window.

The scene was now changed to an appearance really frightful. Every lengthened visage was as pale as death, every haggard eye staring in wild affright. The old lady to whom the tale had been particularly addressed, confirmed every syllable of it, and added many circumstances from secret histories, of her own immediate invention: and every one present had some similar story to tell in support of it, till they at length terrified one another to that degree, that they were afraid to look around, or even raise their voices to bid their servants prepare for their departure.

The gentleman, pleased at the success of his artifice, resolved to improve it to the utmost, and take advantage of their present situation, to work them up to some action, that should make them ashamed, at least, ever to be guilty of the like profanation of that sacred day again: 'Defend us, heaven!' exclaimed he, fixing his eyes with horror, on one of the windows. 'What can that be?' This completed the terror: they all believed the devil was returning to destroy them, for the boldest of them all had not the spirit to turn their eyes, to see what he

looked at, and joined most devoutly in his ejaculation to heaven for defence.

He saw this was the proper moment for what he intended, and so dropping suddenly upon his knees, in which they all followed his example, he repeated aloud the confession in the service of the church, adding, with particular emphasis, to the sins of commission, this of breaking the sabbath, and to those of omission, the neglect of the duties of religion, to which it was devoted; and concluded with a solemn vow, never to be guilty of either again, if heaven would remit its wrath and spare them for the present.

All the while he had performing this ceremony, he had kept his eyes fixed on the window, and at the end of it, exclaimed in a rapture, 'Our vows are 'heard! it vanishes! the danger's over!'—Upon which he arose, as did they all, and fell into the most serious and devout conversation, upon so signal an instance of divine favour and mercy, while their coaches and chairs were getting ready to carry them home, when they retired with thoughts very different from those which they usually brought from such places.

Though every lady in the company had been frightened into a fit of devotion, by what had happened, none suffered so severely by it as the lady of the house, who notwithstanding the public contempt she shewed for religion, was so fearful of ghosts and hobgoblins, that after having persuaded her husband to lay out a large sum of money, (much more than prudence would have permitted,) in repairing and fitting up, in the modern taste, a beautiful antique castle that was upon his estate, upon hearing that a particular apartment in it was haunted by a spirit,

quitted it directly, and never could be prevailed upon to sleep a second night in it. As soon therefore as the company was all gone, and she left to her own meditations, her fears recurred so fast upon her, that she fell into fits, which seemed to threaten her with the total loss of her reason, raving of devils and damnation, and railing against cards, and sabbath breaking, with all the vehemence of a modern enthusiast, among his mad brethren in Moorfields. But this did not last long! the gentleman, to avoid detection, had been obliged to leave his tye-wig, cloak, and wooden leg behind him. These, which were found upon clearing out the apartments, unravelled the whole mystery of the affair, and shewed that it had been all a trick; nor was the lady long at a loss for the author of it; (for the first mention of the discovery had put an end to her fits of fear and devotion) the pains he had often taken to persuade her against these meetings, on this particular day, and the zeal he shewed in the late affair, convinced her it was all transacted by him. This threw her into the most violent rage against him; but as it was impossible to prove, and he denied the fact when charged with it, she could have no other satisfaction of him, than that of disappointing his design, by returning to her former practice with double eagerness, and aggravating the scandal of it by every act of irreligion and profaneness, that she could devise, in which hopeful course she still persists.

As for the male part of the company, who had so manfully leaped out of the windows, and made their escape through the cold and dirt of the night; some of them caught cold, that cost them their noses, and one or two lost their lives in duels, which they fought in vindication of their characters, from so scandalous an aspersion, for it was thought proper to deny the whole story.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

Continued: Maternal tenderness of an uncommon kind. A most magnificent wedding disappointed, by an unhappy instance of female frailty. A new method of calculating general opinion. An unlucky accident changes a scene of joy into grief, and affords an useful caution to old age and infirmity, to guide their steps with proper care. A drawn battle. An instance of fell revenge makes room for a stranger, who restores general harmony.

NOR is she content with offering this flagrant insult to religion and law; the tenderest feelings of nature are also wantonly made the objects of her grossest ridicule; in the absurdity of which, to shew her matrimonial power in its utmost plenitude, she obliges her passive mate to bear his foolish part, and sacrifice common sense, as he had before done conscience, to her capricious tyranny.

As she has no children, upon whom she can display maternal care and love, she affects holding the important and inexpressible tenderness and duty of these in the lowest contempt: and to shew this in the most glaring colours, prostitutes them upon some insignificant animal, in all the solemn pomp and parade of ceremony, usual on such occasions, to make the ridicule more striking.

The present worthy object of her affection was an *owl*, which she caresses and treats with the endearments of a darling child; calling it the fondest names, talking to it for hours together, every Sunday morning, and entertaining her most intimate acquaintances with a particular detail of its most engaging qualities and sensible actions! Nor does her humour stop here; she dresses her favourite in all the fantastic extravagance of the mode, makes a complimentary inquiry after its health, part of the ceremonial of her acquaintance, and celebrates the anniversary of its birth, with the expensive magnificence of a public entertainment, when the dear creature is produced with all the ceremony and state of a royal babe, to receive the praise and caresses of the company; and, to finish the farce, her husband is obliged to act his part, and join with her in receiving the congratulations paid upon the happy occasion.

Perhaps you will imagine that such an unaccountable caprice is meant to expose the servility of complaisance, and to shew to what an height it is capable of being strained, to gratify the humours of the rich. Such a conclusion is not unnatural, nor the general satire implied in it, unjust; but here in respect to her, it does not hold, for she has no such aim in view, nor thinks of any thing beyond the immediate gratification of her own whim; on the contrary, she would be as ready to pay the same compliment to any of her acquaintance, if they required it, indeed the share she makes her husband take in the ceremony, bears a different construction, and is plainly seen to be designed as a most severe and insolent ridicule upon him, as it is no secret, that she imputes her want of children to his fault: a charge, which his blind submission to her will, makes not improbable.

But this is not the first instance of the extravagance of her humour, nor he the only one who has been made the object of public ridicule by it: though he has never missed of his share.

Before her present favourite, a cat engrossed her fondness in as eminent a degree, but unhappily lost that and her life together by a slip of female frailty: for slighting the example of her mistress's chastity, she had taken an opportunity to carry on an intrigue with a cat in the neighbourhood, whom she used to meet in the evenings upon the leads of the house, while her mistress was abroad, and her own attendants engaged in parties of pleasure below stairs.

This unfortunately broke through all her mistress's great designs, who was just then in treaty for a marriage between her and the male favourite of a lady of quality in Paris, the preliminaries of which were all settled, and nothing remaining but to determine where the wedding should be celebrated; she, for the honour of her sex, demanded that the gallant should wait upon his mistress, and the other insisting upon the example of all royal marriages, where the bride goes to the bridegroom; a reason so just, that the heroine of our tale disputed it only for form-sake, and was preparing to set out for Paris, with her husband and a grand retinue, to solemnize the wedding, as soon as the proxy, which had been proposed to be sent by the other party, should arrive.

Upon the first discovery of it, therefore, by apparent symptoms of the frail one's pregnancy, the whole house was in an uproar, every servant turned off, and a counsil of her most intimate friends directly summoned, to consider what was to be done in such an

emergency, and how the treaty of marriage could be broke off, without giving offence to the other parties, or exposing her own disgrace. After much and mature deliberation, it was resolved to send an express immediately to Paris, to prevent the proxy's setting out, and to apologize for breaking off the marriage, on account of a pre-contract, into which madam Grimalkin had inconsiderately entered, without the knowledge of her mistress; and to make this embassy the more respected and effectual, the person thought most proper to be sent upon it, was her husband, who accordingly was obliged to set out on his journey directly, but was rescued from the ridicule of it, by a fit of the gout, which arrested him at his first stage; so that he was forced to transfer the honour of the employment to his gentleman, who acquitted himself of it with great reputation.

But this was not the only distress in which this unfortunate misbehaviour of the favourite involved her mistress. In the first transports of her rage, she had ordered her to be taken out of her presence, and publicly vowed that she would never see her more: but, when her resentment cooled a little, her former fondness returned, and she could not bear the thought of abandoning her, for a first fault, to the low life of a common cat, or depriving herself of the pleasure she enjoyed in her company. But the difficulty was how to receive her again into favour, consistently with the purity of her own character, and without seeming, in some measure, to countenance the incontinency she had been guilty of, by such lenity. While she was in this perplexity between delicacy and love, her instructor in the important science of gaming most luckily happened to pay her a morning visit, to give her a lecture, and inform her of some new discoveries he had made in his mysterious art. As she

knew that he was a nice casuist, the moment he approached her toilet, she informed him of the whole affair, and desired his advice.

After taking some time to deliberate upon the case, 'Madam,' said the sage, shaking his hoary head, and extending the fore-finger of his right hand, 'this 'is a very difficult point to decide: however, I have 'calculated the chances on each side, and have 'found that the odds are as seven, one-fourth, and 'two-fifteenths to five, nearly (for it would be too 'great a trouble for you to examine the proof of it 'in more minute fractions) in favour of your receiving 'the offender into your good graces again, which I 'prove thus: all the ladies in the world are liable to 'some failing or other; now as from weakness of 'constitution, derived from the goodness of their 'families, or brought on by their own intense appli-'cation to the pleasures of polite life, there are not 'above five who are guilty of this particular foible '(I mean among people of fashion, such as you con-'verse with) to eight who are not, it is evident that 'there will be almost eight who will not condemn 'your conduct, for five who will; it being the gene-'ral maxim, always to exclaim against the faults of 'which we are guilty ourselves, to deceive the gene-'rality of the world, and make an appearance of our 'being innocent of them. If this reasoning does not 'appear plain, I will draw it out at length, and adapt 'the calculations to the general rules of Whist, so 'that they may be proved by the cards, as the method 'most familiar, to you, to satisfy your own scruples, 'and answer the objections of your friends; for 'ladies cannot be too circumspect in affairs of this 'kind, where so deep a stake is played for. The 'scheme will not take up much time to draw; nor be 'attended with much expense, not above twenty

'pieces, or some such trifle; for you know I never 'am in the least unreasonable with my friends.'

This judicious solution was so agreeable to her, that she saw the justice of it directly, and embraced it without a moment's delay, ordering the poor delinquent to be immediately brought to her, and, after a little gentle chiding, almost killing it with her caresses. As to the sage casuist, she thanked him for his decision, and, having received his lecture, desired him to reduce his arguments into the form he proposed, as soon as he pleased, as she never had any objection to his demands, and then dispatched cards immediately to all her acquaintances, to inform them of the reconciliation, and invite them to an entertainment which she gave upon the happy occasion.

Accordingly, they all attended, and poured out their compliments in the most polite profusion; but, in the height of their joy, an unfortunate accident happened, that changed their congratulations into condolence.

As the dear creature was handed about, to receive the caresses of the company, an elderly gentlewoman, to shew her extreme fondness for it, by keeping it as long as she could upon her bosom, would needs carry it herself to a lady of quality, who sat on the other side of the room, and desired to have it brought to her; but, striving to be more alert than her paralytic tottering would permit, she fell at her length upon the floor and almost crushed the poor animal to death.

You may conceive what a confusion this threw the whole company into: the cat screamed, the old lady roared, and the voice of all present echoed a general exclamation; and, to heighten the distress, they all

got up at once, and, rushing together to raise the falling pair, hindered each other so, that they lay struggling in no very agreeable situation, or decent posture, on the floor; for the cat enraged at the injury she had received, exerted all her strength for revenge, and fixed her claws in the face and neck of her supposed enemy, growling with the most envenomed spite, which made the innocent author of her disaster, roar, kick, and sprawl, with all her might, as she was unable to disengage herself from the claws of her furious adversary, or even rise from the ground where she lay.

At length, some of the company made a shift to raise and part the combatants; when the poor gentlewoman was hurried to her chair, with her face and neck all in a stream of blood, the attention of the company being entirely taken up with the fright of the lady of the house for the danger of her favourite.

The spirit and strength which she had shewn in revenge of the injury she had received, was some consolation to her mistress, as it seemed to shew that she could not have been very much hurt; but one of the company happening to mention her condition, renewed her fright, and made her resolve instantly to send for one of the most eminent male practitioners of the obstetric art, to inquire into the circumstances of her case, and administer any assistance that might be necessary upon the unhappy occasion.

Accordingly a servant was instantly dispatched in the mistress's name, to the doctor, who attended without a moment's delay, imagining, from the urgency of the message, that some lady of distinction might be taken ill in her house, as he knew the lady herself had no occasion for him, and the footman could give

him no farther information, than that some accident had happened in the company of which there was the usual crowd. As soon as he arrived, he was shewn directly into the drawing-room, whither the lady, with a few select friends had retired, where one of them leading him up to her, and lifting up an handkerchief, that covered the poor dear creature in her lap, opened the case to him, for the mistress's grief was so great, that she was not able to speak.

It is impossible to describe the rage into which this threw the doctor: he looked upon it as an insult, not to be forgiven; and, as he could not wreak his resentment upon ladies, by any act of violence upon their persons, resolved to shew it, by his treatment of the creature, for which they implored his assistance. Accordingly, he stooped very gravely, and taking it out of the mistress's lap, laid it on the ground, and setting his heel upon its head, crushed it to death, before any one had time to interpose in its behalf; then turning to the lady, whose astonishment was so great, that she had not power to speak, 'There, madam!' said he, 'your favourite is delivered from all danger of 'abortion; but take care how you provoke another 'time the resentment of a man, whom nobody pro-'vokes with impunity.'—Saying this, he turned about and marched away, leaving the whole company, and particularly the mistress of the innocent victim of his vengeance, in a condition not to be expressed: she wept, beat her breast, stamped with her feet upon the floor, and vowed the bitterest vengeance; nor is it easy to say, how far her passion might have transported her, had not a gentleman entered the room that very moment with a young owl in his hand, which he had taken out of the nest that morning.

The sovereign remedy for a woman's grief, for the loss of any favourite, whether a cat, a sparrow, or an husband, is a new one. The sight of the owl instantly struck her: it had such a gravity and wisdom in its looks, that she resolved to make it the confidant of all her secrets, and the only counsellor from whom she would take advice that should contradict her inclinations. Accordingly, poor Grimalkin was ordered to be taken away, and the new favourite received in her place. This restored the general harmony and good humour: and the entertainment that was designed to celebrate Mrs. Puss's restoration to her mistress's bosom, served for the reception of the stranger. However, though a new favourite consoled the mistress for the loss of the former, she did not neglect to pay a proper respect to its remains; the body was carefully laid up till next morning, when an eminent undertaker was sent for, and orders given for her decent interment.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

More happy fruits of female government. The history of an eminent patroness of the polite arts. Her peculiar method of shewing a distinguished taste and judgment. An extraordinary charge in a bill at an inn.

TURN your eye now to the other side, and observe that superannuated figure of foppery, at the upper end of the table, who plumes himself like a peacock upon the gaudiness of his dress, and gives his contribution with an ostentation and affected dignity that would disgrace a prince. He is another instance of the happy fruits of woman's government. With all the importance he assumes here, in his own house he is a perfect cypher, of no consequence in himself, but as he adds to that of his wife.

So insignificant a character may be thought incapable of affording either instruction or improvement, sufficient to reward the trouble of displaying it; but then it introduces another, to which it serves as a shade to shew the glaring colours of it in a proper light, and illustrate the vanity, as the former did the vice, of female caprice and ambition.

He had the solid advantage of entering into life with a very affluent fortune; but instead of making it a means of happiness to himself, and benefit to

society, by a rational and benevolent use; to gratify the most absurd avarice, he gave up every enjoyment of it, by marrying an heiress, the known vanity, imperiousness, and extravagancy of whose temper so far over-balanced the greatness of her wealth, that no man of reason or spirit, who had any other possible way of earning a morsel of bread, would have linked his fate to her's.

The consequence was just what he deserved. The moment he became her husband, she assumed the most absolute authority over him, and all he possessed, as if the words of their connection had been inverted, and he had made the covenant of duty and obedience to her, and instantly set up for the patroness of merit in the fine arts and sciences, to shew her superiority of genius over the rest of her sex.

Such an ambition directly marked her out for a bubble to all the needy, sharping adventurers, who, under the pretence of such merit, fly like locusts to this fantastic people, from every part of the globe, in swarms, that literally devour the fruits of the land in such a manner as to starve the natives who are engaged in the same pursuits, and thereby discourage and prevent their rising to that excellence, the want of which is objected to them. For though there may not perhaps be any natural difference between the sexes in the abilities of mind, necessary to form a proper judgment of any science; yet the female labours under such disadvantages from a wrong education, that it is next to impossible for a woman to exert the faculties of reason in any distinguished degree; the time when the seeds of knowledge should be sown being devoted to trifles or absurdities that deserve a worse name, which by these means take such possession of the mind, as to

influence the conduct of the whole life. Some rare instances indeed there are, of women, who break through this oppression, and rise above the prejudices of such an education, to a degree of eminence equal to the foremost of the other sex; but this requires such uncommon strength of genius, as is indulged to a very few; and was by no means the lot of this person: all her pretensions to taste and judgment being founded on her ability to reward them liberally in others. But even in this, her injudicious vanity has always marred the good effects of her generosity and wealth; for, not being able herself to discern real merit, and disdaining to follow the opinions of others, for fear of passing unnoticed among the crowd, she blundered upon the most unlucky method of distinguishing herself that ever entered into an human head; for, as if her opinion was of more weight than that of all the world beside, she sets up to contradict the voice of the public, and always patronizes those whom they reject and decry.

Such a conduct, as I said, naturally lays her open to the impositions of flattery and fraud: though she professes a taste for all the finer arts, music is the particular object of her favour and encouragement: as soon as a new performer arrives, if he is in distress, as is almost always the case, he immediately waits upon this lady, to implore her patronage; this necessarily introduces a display of his abilities, which she never fails to reward munificently, and profess her approbation of, but cautiously, and in general terms only, that she may retract it afterwards, should the public unluckily join with her, for her opinion is always in the opposite scale to that of the rest of the world. But if he is disapproved, she takes him under her immediate protection; she invites him constantly to her table, she supplies him

with money, with the most boundless profusion, and makes parties among that crowd of company, which her wealth and turn for expensive pleasure constantly collect about her, to support him against the favourites of the public; and to shew, that she does this merely from a spirit of contradiction, should the most eminent of these fall off, or be eclipsed by the superior merit of a rival, she instantly forgets the animosities with which she pursued his success, and receives him into her protection and patronage, admiring his grossest faults, and praising the very defects she decried before; while her gentle mate is obliged to submit to this dissipation of his darling wealth, and to be the humble echo of her opinions, in all their various changes without daring to interpose a word in vindication of his own judgment or authority; but thinking himself happy in being permitted to make use of the pittances of his fortune, which he thus contributes to public charities, to give him the opportunity of assuming the momentary consequence you see.

The many impositions which she has suffered from those rapacious sycophants, would be sufficient to make any person see the folly of such a conduct, who had not wilfully resolved against conviction. I shall just mention one instance, for the grossness and singularity of it, and so conclude the disagreeable representation.

To shew her elegant taste in this most pleasing entertainment, and raise an opinion of her importance in the polite world, among her tenants and neighbours in the country, whither she retires in the summer, she always takes with her some of her favourite performers, who cannot fail to please persons who never had an opportunity of hearing any better; and

sometimes even will condescend, upon very particular occasions, as when she gives public entertainments, to comply so far with the taste of others, as to send for some of those who are the highest in general repute; though her country-seat is almost at the extremity of the kingdom: which makes the expense of such a compliment very considerable; for she defrays all the charges of travelling, besides giving a very genteel gratification for the trouble.

Upon an occasion of this kind, some little time since, she sent for a musician of note, to conduct a concert, which she designed to give her neighbours, in the highest taste. The man, finding he had nothing to pay, an unlimited credit being established for him at every stage upon the road, travelled down in the highest luxury to her house, where his performance was also rewarded with a very handsome present. But, whether he thought it unequal to his merit and trouble, or imagining that he should never be sent for thither again, resolved to make the most of the present opportunity: upon his return he took up money at every inn he stopped at on the road, upon the credit given him; and, where he lay, constantly prevailed upon one of the compliant females, who attended, to sleep with him, for a considerable gratification, which he also ordered to be charged to the bill, and left for this lady to pay.

Such an insult might be thought to merit her resentment; but as the punishing of it would open scenes, which must lay her under a necessity of discontinuing her favourite practice of sending for such persons, and expose her extravagance and taste to public ridicule and censure, she thought proper to overlook it as unnoticed, and pay the bills, without

seeming to examine into the particulars of them; and to prevent the story's receiving credit, should it happen to be made known, continued to countenance the man, and even invited him into the country with her the next summer, when he played her many tricks of the same kind, finding he escaped so easy after this.

I have dealt so long upon the characters of this and the former lady, to save myself trouble upon other occasions, as their actions afford a general representation of female life. I mean the life of those females, who, looking upon themselves as raised above the rest of their sex, by rank or fortune, think it necessary to shew their superiority, by breaking through all the rules which reason and religion have established for their conduct.

How prevailing the force of such examples, the instances just given sufficiently shew. Indeed, such is the implicit adoration paid to wealth, such is the reigning passion, for joining in what is called good company, and partaking of their luxurious entertainments, that, let the rich and great propose any folly and vice, however gross and absurd, as the means of introduction to their tables and parties of pleasure, they will be sure of finding persons enough to comply with their humours. These instances are taken from the most licentious caprices, and absurd vanity of this ambition. The former admit of no excuse; and though the latter may be less blameable in themselves, and even bear a kind of resemblance to virtue in many cases, the success is not much better, nor ever sufficient to justify this ambition in females, to quit the subordinate sphere allotted them by nature, and strive to make a figure in the busier and more extensive province of man.

Nor is this the only useful instruction that may be drawn from a display of these characters. It shews also the ridiculous and unhappy situation into which man falls when he tamely gives up the reins put into his hands by Providence, and submits to the government of a woman, whom he was born to command.

CHAPTER XL.

An irremediable defect in human policy. The history of a most eminent personage. A new way of paying the debts of guardianship. A daughter's disobedience in refusing to comply with more than paternal love. The hero of the tale extracts profit from charity, and asserts the rights of agency, in defiance of public opinion and shame.

TAKE notice of the person immediately below him, whom I have just given you an account of. By his large athletic make, nature seemed to design him for some of the most laborious employments in life; but his genius led him to other pursuits, and made him depend upon the sharpness of his mind, rather than the strength of his body, for his support and advancement in the world.

The depravity of man makes many employments necessary in a community, for public safety and advantage, the execution of which is attended with so many circumstances of horror in the punishment of unhappy delinquents, that no man, who is not

destitute of that sympathetic tenderness which is the highest honour of his nature, can bear to undertake them. This throws them upon persons, speculatively speaking, the most unfit for such offices; whose poverty obliges them to practice every iniquity of the profession, into which they were first initiated by vice, and whose hearts are hardened by habit, against every sentiment of virtue and honour, every finer feeling of nature. Thus the hangman, whose crimes first reduced him to take up the horrid trade, continues it from distress, and puts to death wretched offenders, for facts which he is hourly guilty of himself, without compassion or remorse, till he is detected, and suffers the same punishment from another hand. But this is one of those defects of human policy, which no human heart can remedy.

In an employment not very dissimilar in its nature, though dignified by a less opprobrious name, has this person displayed his abilities, for many years, to the astonishment of all who have been witnesses of his exploits. There is a mystery in such scenes too horrid for representation; I shall therefore pass them over, and barely relate a few anecdotes of his private life, which will sufficiently enable you to for a judgment of his whole character.

A man who, from one of the poorest employments by which a wretched life can be honestly sustained, came unexpectedly to the possession of a considerable fortune, by the death of a relation, who would have suffered him to perish for want of a morsel of bread, had some way conceived such a confidence in this person, that upon his own death, in a very little time after his elevation, he entrusted his orphan daughter to his care, together with what he had been able to save for her, during his short possession of

his estate, the inheritance of it passing away, for want of his having male issue, to another branch of the family.

During the minority of his ward, he took care to educate her according to the direction of her father, in a decent but frugal manner, as the fortune she had a right to expect, was not sufficient to place her above the necessity of industry and economy; but upon her coming of age, he was obliged to act another part: he had spent the greatest part of her fortune in his pleasures; for, strange to think, even he had a passion for the pleasures of polite life, and was admitted into the genteelest company, to enjoy them, without any enquiry into his character or station, while he was able to bear the expense. Such a situation must have been distressing to any other man; but the business of his profession soon suggested a method of disengaging himself, which his extensive principles made no objection to his putting in practice.

On the day before she was to receive from him the fortune which was the whole foundation of her future hopes in life, he shewed no signs of uneasiness, but confidently gave her notice, that he designed to pay her the moment she was entitled to receive it, and even appointed the other trustees of the will to meet at his house, and be witnesses to his punctual execution of his trust. Such a conduct naturally gave satisfaction to every person concerned, and entirely removed some apprehension which they had entertained before. But they soon found reason to change their sentiments again. For, that very evening he took an occasion to go through a bye street, just after it became dark, and when he thought himself in no danger of being taken notice of,

where he rolled himself in the kennel, battered his head against the stones, as if he had received several severe strokes, and scattered some paper he had in his pocket for that purpose, about the streets; and then, in that abased appearance, and with all the syptoms of affright and despair in his looks, run into a neighbouring coffee-house, where he told the company, that he had been just knocked down and robbed of a considerable sum of money, which he was to pay the next day. Some of them instantly went to the place in which he said this had happened, where they found his hat and wig, and the papers he had left for them, which at first gained credit to the story; but when the general tenor of his character, and the circumstances of his being to pay that sum the next day, came to be considered, the whole artifice was seen through, especially as he never offered to prove where he had received the money, nor gave any reason for his carrying such a sum about him, the very bulk and weight of which (for he said it was all in specie, to prevent too particular an enquiry about bank-notes) must have been a trouble and incumbrance to him; but barely alleged, that he had always kept the money by him in cash, ever since he had received it: and if any one expressed the least doubt of what he said, or desired to have these particulars better explained, he directly charged them with making insinuations injurious to his character and credit, which he threatened to vindicate by law.

Such a menace from such a man, was not ineffectual! The injured lady was absolutely deprived of every means of doing herself justice; and, as the poor are ever friendless, no unconcerned person cared to enter into a dispute with one of his known experience, and who was acquainted with methods of putting his menaces in execution, which the most

innocent might not find it easy to guard against; besides, it was universally and well known, that even if the whole affair could be detected, he was not able to make satisfaction. Thus every circumstance concurred to give success to his scheme, though not quite so smoothly as he could wish; and the poor young lady, having no redress, was obliged to return to the low state from which she had so lately been raised, and in which she still lives a life of servitude; happy had she never been flattered with better hopes.

But though he could escape the reach of man, divine justice was not to be defeated so, whose vengeance attacked him in so signal a manner, as plainly shewed the just retaliation of the unerring hand of heaven.

Seared as his heart must be by such a life, to the more general feelings of humanity, nature was not quite debauched, and he felt the tenderness and fond anxiety of paternal love in all its force for an only daughter, on whose education, in all the polite accomplishments of the more exalted ranks of life, he spared neither pains nor expense, supporting and adorning her in the genteelest manner, and taking evident delight in lavishing, on such uses, all that he could acquire by every possible means.

Such a conduct, though carried to an excess, had something so amiable in it, that, in some measure, it palliated the blacker parts of his character, and even weakened the credit of many of the stories told of him. But just as he was beginning to enjoy the fruits of his care, by seeing his daughter's eminence in the accomplishments he had taken such pains to teach universally acknowledged, an event happened,

that not only deprived him of that pleasure, but also turned the merit of all his former fondness into the foulest reproach.

His daughter was observed, for some time, to bear the appearance of the most poignant distress. Whenever she was asked the cause of it, by any of her friends, she would melt into a flood of tears, nor would give any other answer than that she was the most miserable of human beings. This raised a variety of conjectures, some of which were far from being advantageous to her: but at length the secret was revealed. She flew one day, in the utmost agony of distress, to a lady of her acquaintance, who had owned to shew the liveliest sense of her merit, and begged her protection from the cruelty of her father, which, she said, was too great to be borne, ever since she had refused to gratify an impious passion which he had long entertained for her, and which had been the motive of all his care and expense in her education.

Such stories are so shocking to human nature, that they are generally doubted; but his character gave such weight to any charge against him, that this was unfortunately believed. At first he made some efforts to induce his daughter to return to him; but she was deaf to his solicitations, and being destitute of every other means of support, threw herself upon the favour of the public, and lives by her skill in the accomplishments which he took so much pains to have her taught. This was not only a severe mortification to his pride, but also made him be looked upon with such horror and detestation, that he has been ever since excluded from the society of every person of virtue or reputation.

I see you wonder at the inconsistency of such a person's appearing in the situation you see him at present, contributing to a public charity, for the relief of the calamities of the poor. To one who can look no farther into man than as he appears at the present moment, such a conduct justly appears unaccountable: but consider, that these are the only places now open for him to mix with persons of character and fortune; for institutions of this kind make no distinctions of persons, but receive, indiscriminately, the benefactions of all who offer. Besides, a genius so ready as his, can turn every thing to advantage, and extract profit even from giving charity. One instance of this kind of address will prove the justice of this reflection, and shew, that in every action of his life, he really preserves a consistency of character.

Some years ago, *the sea broke over its banks*, in a distant part of the kingdom, and not only laid the country waste for a great extent, but also threatened the ruin of the whole, if some means were not immediately applied to put a stop to it. Such an exigence required instant care: the government sent workmen directly to repair the breach, who were obliged to struggle with all the severities of the season, in a most inhospitable climate, to effect their work, it being in the depth of winter, and the danger admitting of no delay.

So severe a service naturally excited the compassion of this people, the most humane and generous under heaven. Accordingly, a public subscription was opened, to buy warm clothing for *the labourers*, thus employed for the advantage of the public, which met with such general approbation that a fund sufficient for the purpose was immediately raised. This person, from the reasons hinted above, was one of the first sub-

that not only deprived him of that pleasure, but also turned the merit of all his former fondness into the foulest reproach.

His daughter was observed, for some time, to bear the appearance of the most poignant distress. Whenever she was asked the cause of it, by any of her friends, she would melt into a flood of tears, nor would give any other answer than that she was the most miserable of human beings. This raised a variety of conjectures, some of which were far from being advantageous to her: but at length the secret was revealed. She flew one day, in the utmost agony of distress, to a lady of her acquaintance, who had seemed to shew the liveliest sense of her grief, and begged her protection from the cruelty of her father, which, she said, was too great to be borne, ever since she had refused to gratify an impious passion which he had long entertained for her, and which had been the motive of all his care and expense in her education.

Such stories are so shocking to human nature, that they are generally doubted; but his character gave such weight to any charge against him, that this was universally believed. At first he made some efforts to induce his daughter to return to him; but she was deaf to his solicitations, and being destitute of every other means of support, threw herself upon the favour of the public, and lives by her skill in the accomplishments which he took so much pains to have her taught. This was not only a severe mortification to his pride, but also made him be looked upon with such horror and detestation, that he has been ever since secluded from the society of every person of virtue or reputation.

I see you wonder at the inconsistency of such a person's appearing in the situation you see him at present, contributing to a public charity, for the relief of the calamities of the poor. To one who can look no farther into man than as he appears at the present moment, such a conduct justly appears unaccountable; but consider, that these are the only places now open for him to mix with persons of character and fortune; for institutions of this kind make no distinctions of persons, but receive, indiscriminately, the benefactions of all who offer. Besides, a genius so ready as his, can turn every thing to advantage, and extract profit even from giving charity. One instance of this kind of address will prove the justice of this reflection, and shew, that in every action of his life, he really preserves a consistency of character.

Some years ago, *the sea broke over its banks*, in a distant part of the kingdom, and not only laid the country waste for a great extent, but also threatened the ruin of the whole, if some means were not immediately applied to put a stop to it. Such an exigence required instant care: the government sent workmen directly to repair the breach, who were obliged to struggle with all the severities of the season, in a most inhospitable climate, to effect their work, it being in the depth of winter, and the danger admitting of no delay.

So severe a service naturally excited the compassion of this people, the most humane and generous under heaven. Accordingly, a public subscription was opened, to buy warm clothing for *the labourers*, thus employed for the advantage of the public, which met with such general approbation that a fund sufficient for the purpose was immediately raised. This person, from the reason hinted above, was one of the first sub-

scribers, and appeared most active in promoting the scheme, offering frequently to undertake the most troublesome part of the conduct of it. But some of them who were acquainted with his character absolutely refused to let him interfere in any manner that should give him the least power over the fund. However, as they did not think proper to make the motives of this caution public, he took an opportunity, one day, when they were indispensibly obliged to be absent, to renew his offer, which his assiduity and success in soliciting subscriptions gave such weight to, that it was received, and he was appointed to purchase and send down some particular articles, that appeared to be immediately wanted, to pay for which, five hundred pounds were directly given into his hands.

This was what he had all along laboured for: accordingly, as soon as he received the money, he remitted of his assiduity, and came no more to their meetings, never taking the least care about the things, for the purchase of which it had been given to him. So flagrant an act of injustice raised the resentment of every one concerned; but that he was prepared for, and despised; and, when they required him to return the money, he gave them a bill for his own trouble, in which he charged every step he had ever gone to solicit and promote the subscription, and fees of agency for every shilling he had received and paid in the course of it, by which means he greatly overbalanced their demand.

Bare-faced as such an imposition was, they had no redress; for he had carefully made his charge according to the rates of his profession; and, though it had been always the intention of every one to bestow their labour as well as their money without any lucrative

view of return, yet, as he had never entered into an actual engagement to that effect, there was now no possibility of defeating his charge.

Such an attempt can never be made with success a second time, as the first instance raises a general alarm.—However, he still persists to join in every thing of the kind that is proposed, in hopes of seizing some such lucky opportunity as he did before. But it is easy to foresee he will be disappointed, for though he exerts himself so strenuously, and takes upon him to offer his advice and direction, as you see, the prejudice against him is so strong, that every thing he says is suspected of design, every thing he proposes rejected, even without examining. Nay, so strong is the detestation of him grown, since this affair of his daughter, that some societies have refused him admission, and others even gone so far as to expel him, in the most ignominious manner, from among them.

CHAPTER XLI.

The representation concluded with an eminent man-midwife. His motives for taking up that profession, with some unfortunate anecdotes of his practice.

I SHALL now present you with a character, the folly of which is a shade to its virtues, and shews them through a medium of ridicule and contempt, more humbling to human vanity than the most atrocious vice.

Observe that skeleton, that figure of famine, who even after a feast looks as if he had fasted for a month, and was just ready to perish for want. That is another of the principal promoters, and indeed supporters of public charity, from the best motives: his benefactions always flowing from the benevolence of his heart, though too often qualified in the manner by circumstances that throw both the gift and giver into ridicule.

For such is the vehemence of his temper, that, not satisfied with providing for the wants of the poor, he will see that the supplies which he bestows are applied in the manner he directs, which introduces him too familiarly into the domestic distresses of the unhappy, many of whom would rather perish for want, than make the circumstances of their wants known:

nor is his fortune only devoted to those uses, his very personal service is always ready, particularly in some cases, where unfortunately, a motive of a different nature from his real one is liable to be mistaken for it, by the malignant temper of the times.

There is no situation of human distress that calls so strongly for compassion and relief, as child-birth. How severe then must the case of those unhappy creatures be, who are left to struggle through such pangs, unassisted, unprovided with any of the comforts, so necessary to support nature in such a conflict.

A sense of this struck his humane heart! He felt the distress and liberally supplied the relief. Well had he stopped here! But fearing that such relief should be misapplied, or insufficient, he would attend himself, to see that nothing was wanted; and at length, to make his assistance complete, learned the *obstetric* art, and now necessarily has more business in it, as he pays for being employed, by the benefactions he bestows, than any one member of the profession.

Laudable as this care, and the motives of it are, it would have been much better, had not the sanguineness of his temper hurried him so far! Had he been content to supply their wants, and let others, whose profession it more immediately is, administer relief. For now, what a field does it open for ill-natured ridicule to see a man of his consequence descend to offices, in the ordinary acceptation of the world, so far beneath him? How easy it is to say, how easy to be believed, that idle curiosity, or some grosser motive, prompts to such uncommon assiduity?

Nor is the evil of this indiscretion confined to him alone; it reflects a kind of ridicule upon the very virtue it would serve; and makes less sanguine minds refrain from the good, for fear they should also share in the reproach. For it is not sufficient for a man to have the testimony of his own conscience for the rectitude of his intentions; there is also a debt of appearance due to the public, to avoid offence, and inculcate virtue by example. One instance will illustrate this, and shew the inconveniences of his inconsiderate zeal.

A poor woman applied to him for relief some time before the moment. According to his custom, he supplied her necessities, and took a direction where to call and see her. The woman, either mistaken herself, or tempted by distress to deceive him, told him a wrong time, which made him come too soon; and, as he always made her some charitable present whenever he came, she still found some complaints to induce him to repeat his visits.

At length the frequency of his coming took the notice of the alley in which she lived, who could not conceive any honest business that a gentleman of his fine appearance could have with such a poor woman, in so obscure a place; and, as such remarks are always improved, some *friend* hinted to the woman's husband, a labouring man who was at his work all day, and therefore could not be witness of his disgrace that his wife had *many* improper visitors come to her, and must certainly have taken to bad courses, to encourage such doings.

The cuckold in imagination went directly home in the greatest rage at his dishonour, but the name of

the visitor, and an assurance that there came no other, soon pacified him, especially as a ready thought struck him, that he might turn the good man's humanity to an advantage, of a nature very different from what he had designed; for the fellow was well supplied with what is called *mother-wit*, which want had sharpened and freed from every restraint of honesty. He therefore sullenly told his wife, that it might be so as she said, but he would have a better proof than her word for it, and therefore she must let him see her visitor the next time he came, and, as she valued her life, assent to every thing which he, her husband, should do or say.

The readiness of her consent encouraged him to open his design to her, which her nuptial obedience and hopes of gain, made her not only give into, but she also improved the scheme to a certainty of success.

The husband accordingly, having prepared some of his associates, placed them properly, the next time the gentleman went to visit his wife, who immediately, upon his coming into the room, began to *cry out*, and implore his assistance.

Though the business came a little inconveniently upon him, as he was full dressed, he would not desert her in her distress, but directly set about giving her the necessary assistance, in the hurry of which, some unlucky stoop burst the string that tied his breeches behind, and down they fell about his heels.

Though this disaster disconcerted him a good deal, the cries of his patient would not give him

time to adjust himself, but he was proceeding in his business, with the most anxious assiduity, when in rushed the husband with his gang, and rewarded his care with a stroke that felled him, fettered as he was in his breeches to the ground.

The scene was now changed! the woman no longer in labour, cried only for revenge, *on the base man who had attempted her virtue*, as the witnesses present attested they had heard her before, and now caught him in the very fact; which the posture he was in, and, above all, the circumstance of his breeches, too strongly confirmed, to the crowd whom the noise had drawn together.

Terrified almost to death at the threats of the enraged husband, who could hardly be held from taking personal vengeance that very moment, and sensible of the consequence should public fame catch hold of such a tale, the poor *criminal* threw himself on his knees, and, convinced that all vindication of his innocence would be in vain, besought only a composition for his offence.

This was just what the parties wanted; but still to increase his terrors, and enhance the price of his escape, such difficulties were raised, as made him glad to yield to any terms they could impose; and, accordingly, he not only purged himself of having done any actual dishonour to her husband, for the intention they would not permit him to controvert, but also made satisfaction to his resentment for the attempt, with one hundred pounds, for which, as he had not a sum immediately about him, he gave a draught on his banker, and waited in *duresse*, till the arrival of it released him

This misfortune made him more cautious for some time; but he begins to forget it now, and goes on *with his business* as before. One thing, indeed, he takes sufficient care about, and that is, that the waist of his breeches is properly secured: for so strong is the impression, which that accident made upon him, that he never walks a dozen steps without pulling them up.

You see most of them begin to nod, I shall therefore draw the curtain here and leave them to their nap, with this observation, that a few such examples as the clergyman, and many of the kind there are, particularly eminent in this exalted virtue of charity, in both the sexes, are sufficient to take off the prejudice which the others must excite, and to preserve the proper respect to principles they propose to imitation.

CHAPTER XLII.

Some account of the officers of the charity. Their care of themselves. They fall out about the division of the spoil. A terrible uproar is appeased by a demand of general concern. The concise manner of passing public accounts. Chrysal changes his service.

WHEN I had taken a sufficient view of the governors, I had leisure to turn my observations to the servants of the society, whose behaviour raised an indignation too strong to be expressed by words.

If the governors feasted, they paid for their feasting; but the servants feasted no less, and were paid for it! Nor was this enormity confined to this day; their whole time was one continued scene of it, and much the greater part of the contributions of the public was prostituted to this abominable abuse: while the poor, for whose relief they were given, too often languished in want of the meanest necessaries, the fund being insufficient for their wants, and the luxury and wages of their servants.

I was diverted from these reflections, by an uproar, in one of the private apartments of the house, where some of the superior servants had got together over a bottle of wine, to settle their respective dividends of the subscriptions of the day. I call them servants,

for that is the proper appellation of all who serve for hire. As I was yet undisposed of, to any particular person, I had it in my power, as I have told you before, to range through the whole territories of the society to which I belonged, and therefore flew to see what might be the cause of this riot, in so improper a place, where I was witness to such a scene as almost transcends belief.

At the upper end of the table sat the treasurer, for it would be a reproach to the poorest society to have fewer officers than the state, with his accounts before him. After a bumper to the success of the charity, 'Mr. Steward,' said he, 'our subscriptions 'have been so good this year, that I think we may 'venture to enlarge our salaries a little; for last 'year they were really scarce worth a gentleman's 'acceptance.'

'That is true,' replied the steward, 'and I be-'lieve we may enlarge the house allowance too, for, 'upon the present establishment, it is hardly enough 'for the days we meet here, and will not afford any 'thing to carry home, to entertain a friend with, as a 'gentleman would desire:—it is but swelling some 'of the sick articles, which at present are scarce 'above the consumption. When I was overseer of 'the parish, we managed things better. We then 'lived like gentlemen: nay, I remember when I was 'churchwarden, that we spent the whole summer, 'jaunting about the country, in pursuit of a gentle-'man, who had a child sworn to him; for fifty 'shillings, which he had been ordered to pay, till the 'bill of our expenses came to fifteen pounds; and 'yet nobody could say against it: so that it is our 'own fault, if we do not live well.'

'Right,' joined the apothecary, 'nor was the 'appointment for medicines any way sufficient. Had 'half what the physicians prescribed been given, 'there would have been nothing to be got by the 'contract.' 'How, Mr. Apothecary,' returned the cook, with a sneer, 'nothing to be got! pray was 'not all you got clear gain? I am sure, from the 'benefit received by the patients, there did not 'appear to have been any thing above brick-dust, 'or powder of rotten post, in any of the stuffs they 'took!'

'Pray S—S—Sir,' stuttered the apothecary, in a rage 'wh—wh—what's that you say? Who m—m '—made you a judge of medicines!'—'Not you, I 'thank God, Sir,' said the cook, 'as my health 'shews. But I have a good reason for what I say; 'for though I put double the quantity of meat in my 'broth, I could not prevent the people's dying, nor 'make the few who recovered, able to go out in twice 'the usual time.'—'S—S—Sir, 'tis all a d—d— 'damn'd lie. Their d—d—dying was occasioned by 'the p—p—poorness of the b—b—broth, and the 'badness of their p—p—provisions, and not by the 'w—w—want of medicines; and I'll p—p—prove it, 'Sir; and how you sup—p—ported your family on 'the m—m—meat that should have been d—d— 'dressed for the sick!'—'You'll prove it, Sir! Take 'care that you do! Gentlemen! take notice of what 'he says! This is striking at my character; and 'must affect my bread.'

'That is true, Mr. Cook,' said the secretary, who had been an attorney's clerk, 'and whatever strikes 'at a man's character, so as to affect his bread, is 'actionable.'—'B—b—but, Sir, he attacked my ch '—cha—character first, and I'll b—b—b—bring my

'action too.' 'So you may, Sir,' replied the lawyer, 'the action will lie on both sides.'

The disputes had hitherto been kept up with such heat, that the company could not interpose a word to pacify them, but the mention of the law made it every one's concern in a moment. 'Silence, gentlemen,' said the treasurer, raising slowly his august bulk, and striking his hand upon the table: 'Silence, I say, 'and let me hear no more of this brawling. Mr. 'Cook! Mr. Apothecary! what do you both mean? 'To discover the secrets of our society, and to blow 'us all up at once? You both heard me say, that 'every thing which was wrong should be adjusted? 'Could you not wait for that, without falling into 'this indecent, this unprofitable wrangle? As for 'you, Mr. Secretary, the leaven of your profession 'will break out; it is sufficient to infect the whole 'mass. Is this your promise, your oath, to follow 'your business, and do as you were ordered, quietly 'and implicitly, without meddling any farther, or perplexing us with the tricks of your former trade? But 'it was in vain to expect it. A lawyer can as well 'live without food, as without fomenting quarrels, 'and setting his neighbours together by the ears. 'Bring an action indeed! and so betray our mystery 'to the impertinent remarks of counsellors, and the 'scoffs of Templers and attorney's clerks. Let me 'hear one word more of the kind, and this moment I 'declare off all connection, and leave every man to 'shift for himself. Our general oath of secrecy, 'attested under our hands, secures me from information, as it would invalidate the testimony of us all.'

With these words, he turned about to leave the room, when the steward, catching him by the breast,

pulled him into his chair, and holding him down, *by main force*, addressed him thus:

'Good God, sir, what do you mean! to take notice 'of the warmth of madmen, who know not what they 'say: you, Mr. Treasurer, have moved in an higher 'sphere of life, and ought to be above such things. '*You* were not raised from the cleaning the shoes of 'of a pettifogging attorney, in whose drudgery you 'lost your ears! from being scullion in a nobleman's 'kitchen, or servant of a mountebank, to dispense his 'packets to the mob! *You* were not raised, I say, 'from any of these stations to the rank of a gentle-'man, by this office, and should be above taking 'offence at the low-lived behaviour of such creatures 'who know no better.'—'Nor w—w—w—was I a 'full-handed ten times b—b—b—bankrupt,' interrupted the apothecary, as he would have done sooner, had rage left him power of utterance, 'that b—b—b '—being unable to get credit any l—l—l—longer, 'came from cheating the p—p—p—public, to cheat-'ing the p—p—p—poor! nor a c—c—c—cast off, 'worn out p—p—p—pimping footman, whose dirty 'services w—w—were rewarded with this place.'

This made the madness general, and they were just going to proceed to blows, when the porter entered hastily, and told them the committee were adjourned to their chamber, and sent for their accounts, to sit upon them directly.

This brought them all to their senses, and made them friends in a moment. 'Gentlemen,' said the treasurer, 'we have all been too hot, all to blame; 'but let there be no more of it! Let us agree among 'ourselves, and we may defy the world.'

Upon this a general shake of the hand put an end to the whole contest, and they proceeded to business, as if no such thing had ever happened, unanimous in their endeavours to cheat the public, and fatten on the spoils of the poor.

By that time the committee had smoked a pipe, and drank their coffee, the accounts were laid before them, over which they nodded a few moments, and then passed them without exceptions. The next thing was to pay the salaries of the officers, in which distribution it fell to my lot to be given to the chaplain.

CHAPTER XLIII.

Some remarks on language. Character of Chrysal's new master. Chrysal attends his master's wife on a visit to a superior lady. Polite reception.

I HAVE often been apprehensive that the manner in which I express myself may lead you into some mistakes of my meaning, the signification of words, in the language of men, being so unsettled, that it is scarce possible to convey a determinate sense, without such a periphrasis as would take up too much time in such complicated scenes as those I describe; for where different, or perhaps contrary, meanings are signified by the same word, how easy it is for a mind prone to error, to take the wrong one!

For instance, the character of a good man may be thought to be as safe from misapprehension, from the immutability of the virtues which constitute it, as any that can be attributed either by or to human frailty: and yet how variously, how contradictorily, is it applied!

On the *Royal-Exchange*, he is a *good man* who is worth ten thousand pounds, and pays his bills punctually, by whatever private and public frauds and injustice he has amassed that sum, and maintains his credit. At the politer end of the world, *goodness* assumes another appearance, and is attributed to him who entertains his company well, pays his play-debts, and supports his honour with his sword, though he is guilty of the basest breaches of every civil and moral virtue, and lives in professed violation of all laws human and divine; while in the strictness of truth, and propriety of expression, no greater abuse of words can be conceived, than that of prostituting this character on either, except it were in compliance with the modern, modish way of speaking by contraries.

I do not give this as the only instance: they are innumerable, and occur in every moment's conversation. The horse that wins the match, goes *damn'd* fast; as the one that loses, goes *damn'd* slow. The weather in summer is *hell-fire* hot, in winter *hell-fire* cold.

Now, what sense can the very *Devil* himself, to whom you refer all difficulties, make of such contradictions? Though, indeed, these particular phrases give him pleasure, as they shew the inclination which men have to his empire, by making the very terrors of

it familiar to their minds in their common conversation.

But I am not at leisure to prescribe rules for avoiding this confusion, one of the most extensive causes of human error. I shall only give you some cautions to prevent your falling into it, in respect to what I say to you.

You are to observe, then, that whenever I speak in the person of another, I always would be understood in the sense which that person would be understood in at that time, without any further regard to moral, or physical truth, or propriety of speech. But, when I speak my own sentiments (which indeed I very rarely do,) I shall always deliver them with perspicuity and precision, as far as the jargon I am obliged to use will allow, and would have my words taken in the sense usually given to them, in the particular subject I may be then speaking of; as the barrenness of language has not been able to afford distinct terms to them all, but is forced to wrest known ones to different, and often unknown meanings; a proof of the injustice of the general complaint against the verbosity of the moderns; whereas, if (by many,) distinct words are meant, their fault is directly the reverse.

My new master was a person of some learning, and what was of more use, of thorough knowledge of the world; but wanting friends and interest to advance him to those dignities which he thought due to his merit, he had solicited this place, in discharge of the duties of which he was indefatigably diligent, not merely for the paltry consideration of a poor salary (for, as he was not in the secret, he had no share of

the spoils, though his circumstances and knowledge of the value of money could not let him refuse it, but to place his abilities in a more conspicuous light, where they might take the notice of his superiors.

As soon as he had received his stipend, he went home, where he found his wife dressed in all her best clothes, and expecting him with the utmost impatience! 'My dear,' said she, 'how could you stay 'abroad so late? I have been waiting for you above 'these two hours, and was just going without seeing 'you.'—'So late, my dear! it is scarcely six 'o'clock! But where are you going in such haste?' —'To the Bishop's! the Rector of —— died in an apoplectic fit as he was taking his nap after dinner 'this evening, and you know, my intimacy with the 'Bishop's lady entitles me to ask any thing from her.' —'But, child, this is not in her power to give, and, 'even if it was, it is too much for a common acquaint-'ance to expect!'—'This diffidence has been your 'ruin! You are always afraid of asking, as if there 'was ruin in being refused; but that is not the case! 'Ask and you shall have, is my text! Now-a-days, 'nothing is got without it.'—'Yes, child, but too 'frequent and improper asking brings contempt.'— 'The manner—the manner of asking is the thing! 'And you cannot think I want to be taught that now, 'after having lived so long among the Great! Often 'have I known a request *properly* made gain a man 'a place, for which he was never dreamed of! As 'to the greatness of this living, never mind that! the 'greater it is, the greater will be your obligation to 'the person who gets it for you! What money have 'got about you? We shall make a *party*, perhaps. 'And let me have the five hundred pound note; I 'may have occasion for that too, to make a *bet*.'

'There, my dear, is the money I received to-day! 'I'll step up for the note: but, my dearest, take care 'what you do! It is our all! and be sure you are not 'tempted to any thing like simony: it is a great 'crime, and makes a man incapable of every thing, if 'it is detected.'—'And the fool that is detected 'deserves never to rise! You may call a thing by 'what nonsensical name you please; but, if know-'ledge of the world were to prevent people's rising 'in it, I do not know who would be uppermost now-'a-days! Bring me the note, and leave the rest to 'me. You shall know nothing of what I intend till 'it is done, and then the fault, if any, will be all 'mine!—Here, Jane, settle the furbellows of my 'scarf, and, John, call a chair to the door directly.'—'Well, my dear, here is the note: I leave all to you: 'I do not desire to know what you intend: but 'remember, my dear, this note is our all!' 'Never 'fear: the chair is come, and I must lose no time: 'you will divert yourself with your children, or 'books, I suppose, or go to the coffee-house. Per-'haps I may not return till it is late.'—'I wish you 'success, my dear, and pray be cautious.'

With these words the doctor retired, but to which of the amusements his wife mentioned I cannot say, for he had given me to her, who carried me away to the bishop's.

When she came there, the footman answered, that it was not his lady's *night*, and she was not at home: but my mistress had lived too long among the great, to take his words in their literal meaning, and putting half-a-crown into his hand, told him she had some earnest business, and must see her. The doors instantly flew open, his lady was at

home, and my mistress shewn up without any farther difficulty.

The bishop's lady was sitting at a snug *party*, with three or four select friends, and seemed not much pleased at the intrusion of my mistress, to whom she scarce deigned a nod, but turning to the footman, 'I thought, *sirrah*,' said she, 'that I was 'not to be at home this evening! I suppose I shall 'have all the mob of the town let in upon me.' 'Dear madam,' replied my mistress, 'the man is 'not to blame: he told me you were not at home; 'but, having some very earnest business, I made 'bold to break through your orders; but hope for 'your pardon when you know the cause of my intru-'sion.' 'O, madam,' returned the lady, 'you know 'I am always glad of your company. I only chide 'the fellow for not obeying my orders. Pray be 'seated, madam; as soon as the *rubber* is up I shall 'wait upon you.' 'Dear madam,' added my mistress, 'you need not give yourself that trouble; 'now I am with you, my business can wait your 'leisure.'

CHAPTER XLIV.

A genteel evening. A dream, and a bet, and a family supper. Conjugal tenderness. The bishop's dejection at the death of the doctor, and danger of the archbishop, is diverted by another dream.

WHEN the rubber was finished, my mistress was asked to *cut in*, one of the party being taken suddenly ill, which she did, and sat out the whole evening, her success at cards keeping up her spirits, and giving her hopes of the like in the greater affair she came about: but her patroness had very different fortune, having lost every rubber; and, what was still worse, several *by-bets*, which she made *to bring herself home.*

This put her into such a temper, that the moment the rest of the company was gone, she turned to my mistress, who saw them all out—'And now pray, 'madam, may I ask you what was the great business 'that brought you here this evening?' said she. 'Unlucky business it has been for me, I know; for 'I have never held a card since you came: but I 'shall take care that rascal who let you in shall 'never serve me so again! He shall strip and turn 'off, without his breakfast, the moment I am up in 'the morning.' 'Dear madam,' replied my mistress, unabashed at such a salute, 'have patience a mo-'ment, and I hope to make you amends for all!'

'Will you please to sit down to one sober party of '*piquet?* You are always too *hard* for me, yet I'll 'venture all my winnings, and perhaps what I have 'to say in the mean time may compensate for my 'intrusion.'

The lady could not imagine what she meant, but the thought of so good a match brought her a little to her temper, and, though it was near ten o'clock, she sat down to cards with as much keenness, as if six hours dradging at them had only whetted her desire for play.

As soon as a *repique* or two had confirmed her good humour, my mistress says to her, 'Dear ma-'dam, that is right: have you heard of the sad 'accident that happened this evening?' 'Not I,' replied the other, 'pray what was it?' 'Why poor 'Dr. ———, was taken ill shortly after dinner, and 'died in his chair!' 'Ah, then, I suppose he had 'plum-porridge, and over-eat himself! and so burst 'a pudding, as we say to children. Ha! ha! ha!' 'Ha! ha! ha!—But, pray madam, have you any 'faith in dreams? What do you think? I dreamed 'last night that I saw you at court, on some *great* 'occasion, with just such a diamond necklace on as 'the countess's, which you had bought with five 'hundred pounds that you won from me on a *bet*; 'you laying that my husband would, and I that he 'would not, get the doctor's living! Well, to be 'sure, there must be something more than ordinary 'in it; for, can you believe it? this very morning I 'put a bank-note for five hundred pounds in my 'pocket, here it is; though I did not think of the 'poor man's death till I heard it as I came by this 'evening, when the dream ran so strongly in my 'head, that I could not forbear breaking in upon

'you, a rudeness I never should have been guilty of 'upon any other occasion.' 'Dear madam, you 'need make no apology to me: you know your com- 'pany is always welcome, I am always at home to 'you!' 'But, madam, what do you think of my 'dream?' 'I don't know. I only wish it were to 'prove true! For five hundred pounds could never 'come more seasonably.' 'Then you must win it; 'for my heart is set upon making the *bet*; and I 'assure you, I have such a regard for you, that I do 'not even wish you to lose: and that is what few 'gamesters can say.' 'You are a pleasant crea- 'ture: but as for the *bet*, it shall be upon condition 'that my lord is not under any engagement to the 'minister, or her grace who got him the bishopric. 'if he is disengaged, I will lay you, and you shall 'lose, my girl, if it was ten times as much, and there's 'encouragement for you to hold. The bell rings: 'will you walk down and take a bit of supper? There 'is nobody but my lord and I; but do not take the 'least notice of any thing about the matter, nor even 'seem to have heard of the doctor's death, should 'my lord mention it; but muster all your spirits, 'and be as entertaining as you can, for I always 'work him up best when he goes to bed in a good 'humour.'

The piquet match being thus at an end, I was paid away to the bishop's lady, whose winnings and expectations sent her to supper in high spirits, where she found his lordship already seated in a very thoughtful mood.

After the usual complimentary expletives that usher in every polite conversation, 'Pray, my lord,' says my new mistress to her husband, 'what will you 'eat? Shall I help you to a bit of this fricassee? I

'believe it is very good.'—'No, my dear, I thank
'you,' replied his lordship, 'I have not the least
'appetite! What is it, pray?'—'Sweet-breads and
'cocks'-combs,' returned his lady, 'you used to like
'them, and they are very nice: or will you help
'yourself to a bit of that fowl before you? Some-
'thing you must eat.'—'No, my dear, I am obliged
'to your care; but I do not choose any thing to-
'night: I am not very well! We all eat too much!
'Repletion kills half the people of England: we eat
'too much!'—'You are going to be *hipped* my dear:
'John, give your master a glass of Madeira: fill the
'glass: eating never hurt any one, who washed down
'his victuals with a glass of good wine; horse-meals,
'indeed, are enough to choak human creatures. So!
'do you not find yourself better now? Taste this
'fricassee; you cannot think how good it is!'—
'Well, you will have your way, you may do as you
'please, though never so contrary to my inclinations!
'Do you call this a fricassee? I thought fricassees
'had spice put in them: this is as insiped as chopped
'hay: Lord deliver us from such cooks: the bad-
'ness of servants, in general, seems to be a judgment
'on the vices of the age?'—'Well, my dear, taste
'that fowl, it looks like a good one, and the cook
'could not spoil that. Pray, madam, shall I trouble
'you to help his lordship to a leg, and a wing, and a
'bit of the breast.'—'You give me too much, I shall
'never be able to eat all this: beside, you know, my
'dear, I choose a bit of the rump.'—'Eat that first,
'my dear, and then you shall have the rump: but
'what has happened to make you so low-spirited this
'evening?'—'O child, who can be other than low-
'spirited, when such instances of mortality happen
'before our eyes every hour? Who can tell but the
'misfortune may be his own next moment? There's
'doctor——, poor man, was taken off this evening,

'without a minute's warning to prepare for such a 'tremendous change, just after he had made an hearty 'dinner! Here, John, take away my plate; I will 'not eat a bit more, nor ever sleep after dinner again!' —'And, John, give your master another bumper of 'Madeira; that was what the doctor wanted, he eat 'a great deal, and did not allow himself any drink. 'Drink good wine, and never fear that eating will 'hurt you.'—'Ah! but that was not the case of his 'grace of ———, who lies this moment in the ago- 'nies of death: his physicians left him two hours 'ago! the Lord prepare us all, and give us notice of 'his coming! He did not stint himself of wine; he 'took his bottle cheerfully, good man!'—'Cheer- 'fully, did you say? I should have said sottishly; 'for he has done nothing but drink for these many 'years past: he has run into the opposite extreme 'from the doctor, drinking too much, and not eating 'enough to support nature. And I hope you do not 'say he is gone without warning at fourscore? He 'has had time enough to prepare: but why should 'these examples affect you particularly? You do not 'eat like the doctor, nor drink like his grace, and are 'young enough to be son to the youngest of them; 'why then should you fear their fate? Here, John, 'give me a pint glass half full of Madeira, and reach 'me three or four of those jellies. Now, my dear, 'if you are afraid to eat or drink, sup this with a bit 'of bread, and I will answer for its agreeing with 'you.'

My late mistress sat all this time at her supper, without being able to join in the conversation; but as soon as his lordship's taking the jellies made a pause in his lady's tenderness, she called for a glass of wine, and, bowing to the bishop, drank to him by the title of *his grace* very gravely.

His lordship started, and his lady stared, while she finished her glass without any emotion, and seemed quite unconscious of having said any thing unusual or improper. This behaviour still embarrassed them more; when the lady, unable to contain her surprise, 'Dear madam,' said she, 'what have you said? Or 'how came you to address my lord by that title?'— 'I hope, madam,' replied the other, 'I have not said 'any thing improper! You really frighten me! I 'hope I have not been failing in my respect, or 'addressed his lordship by any improper title?'—'I 'cannot say an improper one, indeed! but one that 'does not belong to him, at least as yet,' returned the lady. 'Dear madam, what do you mean? Pray do 'not distress me! But you must divert yourself 'surely! It is not possible that I could fail in any 'respect to his grace!'—'Ha, ha, ha! There it is 'again! Fail in your respect! No. You only raised 'your respect too high! You called him his grace, 'that's all.'—'And is that all? Thank heaven that 'I did! and long live his grace, I say again,' said she dropping on her knees, and eagerly kissing his hand; 'long live your grace! There is, there must be 'truth in dreams, and infidels alone can doubt it.'

At the mention of dreams, the bishop, who had hitherto continued to sip up his jelly without seeming to take any notice of what they were saying, could not forbear showing some emotion; for he had the strongest faith in them, and always sanguinely defended their credit, especially since his present elevation had confirmed those of his grandmother: 'What 'dreams, pray, good madam?' said he, addressing my late mistress with a visible anxiety. 'What 'dreams do you mean? Those which were thought 'to have respect to me are understood to be already

'accomplished.'—'Please your grace, the impulse 'of the spirit is upon me, and I cannot call you by 'any other title! Please your grace, I say, I dreamed 'last night, as I told your lady but just now, that I 'met her at court, on some very *great* occasion, as 'fine as hands could make her (I told her this just 'now, before I knew one syllable of his grace's 'death) and that she came up to me smiling, and 'thanked me for the cause of her coming there, for 'it was I who had made you a great man! Now, 'what could this possibly mean, but what has hap-'pened here this moment, when, by giving you this 'title first (and, Lord knows, I did it without the 'least design, or even being sensible of it when I did 'it) I may in some manner be said to have made you 'the great man it belonged to: let the world say 'what they will, I do believe there is truth in dreams, 'and I think mine is *out* now.'

She ran on with this rant at such a rate, that it was impossible for the bishop to interrupt her, even had he been so inclined; but that was far from being the case: he heard her with attention, and what she said made such an impression on him, that he sat some time musing on it, after she had stopped before he had power to speak a word.

As for his lady, she at once took it to be all a fetch, calculated merely to forward the scheme of the wager about the doctor's living, and as much resolved to humour it, and not interrupt his meditations, but addressing herself to the other, 'Indeed, madam,' said she, 'I do not know what to say to this affair! 'When you told me your dream just now, I made 'nothing of it, but this account of his grace's death 'almost staggers me! Well, if this succeeds, and 'who knows what may happen, I shall ever hereafter 'have more faith in dreams.'

CHAPTER XLV.

A dissertation on dreaming. The dream pursued to the astonishment, and almost conversion of the bishop's lady. Her veracity in recounting some circumstances relating to it. She and his lordship persuade each other to dream that it is true.

BY this time his lordship had considered the matter, and addressing himself to the dreamer, 'Pray, ma-'dam,' said he, 'what time had you this vision or 'dream? In the night, or towards the morning?'— 'In the morning, my lord,' replied she, 'at the con-'clusion of my second sleep: and, indeed, it made 'such an impression upon my mind, that I could not 'go to sleep after: for it was not in the confusion of 'common dreams! I saw every thing distinctly and 'regularly, as if I was in the very place; and particu-'larly your lady appeared as plainly to me as she sits 'there, Lord bless us! and by the same token she 'was dressed in white damask, spick and span new, 'and had the most beautiful diamond necklace on 'that ever my eyes beheld; and charmingly she 'looked I thought.

'I really do not know what to say to this matter,' replied his lordship with great deliberation, 'the 'visions of the morning have ever been held in most 'repute, for then the mind has recovered from the 'fatigues of the preceding day, and is able to exert

'its abilities, and look forward into the time to come. 'There are some good circumstances I own in this 'dream! I am glad that my wife was not dressed in 'colours; that would have been an ill omen; but 'white is the peculiar garment of success; angels are 'clad in white: and in this case particularly, it may 'prefigure the episcopal lawn, as that is an emblema-'tical type of the purity of the episcopal function; 'and the episcopal and archiepiscopal differ only in 'degree. As for the necklace, there may be more in 'that also than is apprehended. Precious stones are 'the *insignia* of dignity, and in the jewish priest-'hood, particularly, were symbolical of the highest 'order; for none of the priests wore them but the 'supreme or high priest, whose dignity answered 'nearly to that of primate with us; and if such 'further blessings should be the divine will, it were 'impious and ungrateful to refuse its favours. Per-'haps I speak unintelligibly to you; but the opinions 'of the learned must be delivered in their phrase.'— 'Pray, my lord, proceed: I could hear your lord-'lordship for ever; I am always the wiser and the 'better for hearing your lordship.'

'Then, as to the credit to be given to dreams,' resumed his lordship, 'though the scepticism of these 'unhappy times may deny it, yet the piety of wiser 'antiquity was of another opinion, of which number-'less instances might be given out of the holy scrip-'tures.—And among the Gentiles, the greatest of 'their poets says,

"Οναρ εκ διος εστι."

'That is, in English, *Dreams proceed from* Jove, 'that is, from the supreme Deity, whom they erro-'neously called by that name. And though the 'heathens were guilty of great superstitions in this

'particular of dreams, it was not in the credit they 'gave them, but in the methods which they used to 'procure them; such as offering sacrifices, and 'sleeping in the skins of the victims, and many 'others; whereas the dream that comes from hea-'ven, comes unsought and unexpected, and should 'be received with reverence. And if this is such, 'and I own it has much of the appearance, Thy will 'be done, O Lord! Thy servant submits as it is his 'duty.'

Greatly as they must have been edified by this elaborate dissertation, the ladies had much ado to refrain from laughing in his face while he delivered it, especially his wife, who knew not which to admire most, the readiness of the thought, or the ease with which it was received. But the dreamer had a further scheme in her head, to carry on which she now got up to go away; and bending the knee to the bishop, 'My lord,' said she, 'may I beg your 'lordship's blessing! I hope, and I am confident 'in that hope, that mine was not a common dream, 'from the impression it made on my mind, which 'could not have been stronger, if I had actually 'been present at your lady's kissing the king's hand, 'on your promotion; but, if my zeal has hurried me 'too far in my expressions of it, I rely on your 'goodness to forgive my fault, which was rather an 'enthusiasm than a design; and so, my lord, I beg 'leave to wish you a good night.'

With these words she withdrew; and her patroness wondering she had not thrown her a wink, and desirous to have a laugh with her at her husband's credulity, went as to see her to her chair; when turning with her into another room, 'That was an 'excellent thought,' said she, 'and will make our

'affair quite easy if he is not engaged.' 'I do not 'understand you, madam,' replied the other, 'pray 'what thought do you mean?' 'Why, child, that 'of the dream; what else should I mean?' 'A 'thought, dear madam! Why do not you think I 'was serious, and the dream real?' 'Not one word 'of either, I assure you; and I wonder at your 'asking me that question here, where no one is 'present to observe us.' 'Dear madam, you have 'quite mistaken me, I assure you. It is true, I can 'jest sometimes; but in this give me leave to say, 'that I was most serious; and what is more, that I 'am sure the event will confirm it.' 'You astonish 'me, madam; I declare, I looked upon the whole as 'a mere *finesse* to promote our scheme about the 'doctor's living for your husband!' 'I am sorry, 'madam, that you should have such an opinion of 'me, as that I could invent such a story on any 'account.' 'Well (as I said before, though in ano-'ther sense) I know not what to make of the whole! 'But as you are so positive, and my lord seems 'inclined to believe you, perhaps there may be more 'in it than I can see; and therefore I shall suspend 'my opinion till I see the end of it. This though I 'promise, that my assistance shall not be wanting to 'either part of the dream.' 'And I promise you 'that I will make good all I said, particularly about 'the wager and the necklace; and so, madam, I 'wish you a good night. I shall do myself the 'pleasure to call and see how you are in the 'morning.'

This gave the whole affair a new face; and threw the bishop's lady into a meditation as profound as his lordship's. 'Can this be possible?' said she to herself, 'and yet how could she have the face to 'stand it out so, if it was not true? But then it was

'but a dream! Aye, but my husband says dreams 'are not to be slighted; and he should know more 'than I, at least of those things that are to be found 'in books. And what if it should be so after all? 'and that I should take place of Mrs. ——, and 'Mrs. ——, and Mrs. ——, and all the rest of the 'bishops' ladies! That would be charming! and I 'believe in my soul I shall; for I have always 'looked upon them with a contempt that shewed I 'should be one day their superior. Well, *Happy 'come lucky*, says the proverb; my endeavours shall 'not be wanting, as I promised Mrs. ———, whose 'five hundred pounds will be a pretty earnest of the 'archbishopric.'

Having thus argued herself into a kind of belief of the dream, she went in to his lordship, whom she found absorbed in thought about the *vision*. 'Well, 'my dear,' said she, sitting down by him; 'what is 'your opinion of this strange matter? I own it is 'above my comprehension! At first, I imagined she 'might have been only in jest, and have invented the 'whole story merely to divert your lowness of spirits; 'but when I went out with her into the next parlour, 'and put it home to her, she still persisted in it, and 'confirmed the truth of what she said by such asse-'verations, that I could not avoid believing her.'

'But, my dear,' replied his lordship, 'she said 'she told you her dream before she came in here, or 'had heard a word of his grace's illness!'—'She 'most certainly did, my lord; and with other circum-'stances, that make the whole still more surprising! 'Pray, what time did the doctor die, my dear?'— 'About half an hour after four.'—'That is most won-'derful! And pray, my dear, who is to have his

'living? or are you under any engagement about it?' —'No, child, I am not; nor have I determined 'whom to give it to. But why do you ask these 'questions? What are they to the purpose of the 'dream?'—'I shall tell you, my lord. You must 'know then that she came here about four o'clock, 'just as I had got up from dinner, all in the greatest 'hurry; and with a kind of wildness, I do not know 'how, in her looks, told me her dream; but with 'some circumstances that I know her bashfulness 'would not permit her to mention before you; and 'these were, that I had bought the diamond neck-'lace, she thought I had on at court, with five hun-'dred pounds which I had won from her, on a wager 'that you would give her husband the doctor's living. 'Now, as he was not even sick at the time of her 'telling me this, there could be no design in it; and 'this is what makes me take the more notice of the 'matter.'

'But are you sure, child, that she told you this so 'early as four o'clock?'—'Rather before it, my dear; 'and what makes me so positive about it is, that a 'little after she had finished her story, she happened 'to look at her watch, but it was down, and so she 'asked me what o'clock it was by mine, that she 'might set by it; and I remember it wanted exactly 'six minutes of four.'—'Pray, let me look at your 'watch; have you not altered it since?' 'No, my 'dear! but why do you ask?'—'Because it is nine 'minutes faster than mine, and it was just half an 'hour past four by his watch, as they told me, when 'he died, and his and mine were exactly together; so 'that the six minutes which your watch wanted of 'four, and the nine minutes it is faster than mine, 'make a quarter before four, which was three quarters 'before he died. This is most wonderful! for there

'could be no design or art in it. This is most wonderful! But there have been many revelations made in dreams, even in our own times; as for instance, that in Drelincourt; for it could be no other than a dream; and that other of the great Duke of Buckingham's rise, and afterwards of his death, as it is most judiciously and faithfully represented by the Reverend Historian*, not to mention many more. As to the doctor's living, my dear, I make you a compliment of it; you may give it to whom you please: though the curate is a very learned and good man, and has a large family; beside that he has been recommended to me by the whole parish, whom his long residence among them, for he has been there above thirty years, has made love and respect him as a father.'—'Then let them provide for him, like dutiful children. What assurance! to pretend to dictate to you, as if you were not the proper judge of such matters! If it was for no other reason I would not give it to him, to teach them their duty and distance another time.'

'There may be something in that: I do not like such interfering in my conduct neither; and therefore you may give it to whom you please. And her husband is a man of learning and good character too, who will not discredit any preferment; but take care that you do not any thing improper. As to your wager, there is no harm in that; but even so, it should be kept a secret; I must know nothing of the matter.' 'I thank you, my dear lord; I shall be sure to observe your directions; and the accomplishment of this part of the dream I take as happy presage of the rest; but you must not be wanting to yourself; you had better, I think, go to her grace, and see what may offer to promote our

* Echard.

'hopes.' 'That is not a bad thought, my dear; but 'it grows late; in the morning we shall see what is 'to be done.' Saying this, they withdrew whither we must not follow them; for of the genial bed 'with most mysterious reverence I deem.'

CHAPTER XLVI.

History of the dreamer. She loses her wager, which she pays with pleasure. His lordship waits upon her Grace. His knowledge of the world promotes a noble instance of charity Chrysal enters into the service of her Grace.

I HAVE observed your surprise and admiration at the ready presence of mind and confidence of my late mistress, who could, in a moment, invent such a story, and persist in it so steadily, as not only to impose upon the bishop's easy credulity, but even upon his wife also, who was, in a manner, in the secret of her design, but could not interrupt my story to satisfy it sooner, by giving you her history.

She was a distant relation to a noble lord, on whom the extravagance of her father left her dependant. This occasioned her being taken into his family; where she lived several years as an humble companion to his lady. As she was handsome, his lordship had a mind for a nearer relation with her; but an unfashionable virtue prevented her compliance, which turned his love into the strongest

hatred, for fear she should inform his lady, to whom she was not more agreeable, and upon the same account; as her observing temper had given her an opportunity of seeing much more than her ladyship desired to have her tell.

This made her situation very unhappy in the family; and inclined her to hearken to the addresses of the chaplain, to whom his lordship gave a small vicarage with her, as did his lady five hundred pounds, that they might part decently, and not provoke her to speak. As for herself, you have seen that nature was liberal to her in the endowments of her mind, which the state which she was bred in improved, or rather sharpened into a thorough knowledge of the world, that enables her to take the advantage of all its follies. But to return to the bishop and his lady. This affair had made such an impression on their minds, that they could dream of nothing else all night but pomp and precedence, which effectually secured the grant in favour of my late mistress from all danger of revocation.

They were scarce seated to breakfast, when word was brought them that she was below; upon which she was immediately invited up, her company being too agreeable to admit of any distance or reserve.

The compliments of the morning being paid on all sides, his lordship, with a look of great benevolence, asked her for her husband, and if he was at home; to which she answered that he was, and ready to pay his duty to his lordship, if he had any commands to honour him with. 'None that will be disagreeable I hope,' replied his lordship, 'and if he is at leisure.' 'At leisure, my lord!' replied she in a kind of rapture, for a wink from the lady had

explained the matter to her. 'He is, he must be at 'leisure! No business can interfere with his duty! 'I'll step for him this moment.' 'You need not 'give yourself that trouble, madam,' returned his lordship. 'John, do you go and tell Mr. —— that 'I should be glad to speak with him. For, madam, 'I think I cannot do less than reward his learning, 'piety, and good life, with the living of the poor 'doctor. It is what I have long resolved, though I 'never mentioned it before, because I would not 'torture him with expectations; and I give it to 'him now, thus early and unasked, to spare his 'modesty, and to save myself from the solicitations 'of others.' 'Long live, God bless your grace;' said she, throwing herself at his feet, and embracing his knees in ecstacy, 'for so I see it will be, every 'thing will come out just according to my dream! 'I could not forbear sending to the late archbishop's, 'just before I came here, and the porter (for I would 'not send a servant, for fear my known attachment 'to your lordship should make it taken notice of) 'brought me word, *that he was at peace.*' This completed the bishop's faith, and prevented his sending to inquire, for the same delicate reason that she gave.

'I must wish you joy, madam,' said the bishop's lady, 'of this advance in your fortune! Though I 'am almost angry that my lord did not let me into the 'secret. I have lost some hours happiness by his 'reserve; for I always make the happiness of my 'friends my own.'—'Dear madam, I thank you; on 'my knees I thank, I pray for you both! And give 'me leave, madam, to wish *you* joy of his lordship's 'promotion, and of your just advance in rank, as well 'as of all the ornaments belonging to it!'—'The 'necklace, I suppose you mean? Ha, ha, ha!'—'I

'do, indeed, dear madam, and of every other appi-
'ness that can attend so elevated a station.'

Her husband now entered, in the utmost agitation of spirits between hope and fear; for he was not a stranger to his wife's scheme; (indeed he had suggested the first hint of the bet himself, but with an address that made her think it was her own, he spoke so distantly; for he always preserved the appearance of character, even with her) and the ladies not thinking it proper to be present at the mysterious ceremony of the bishop's singing the collation, which he did directly, to avoid giving offence, by refusing other applications, they withdrew, when my mistress was paid her bet, with as great pleasure, by the loser, as she felt in receiving it.

The dream being thus far happily accomplished, the successful dreamer and her husband went home in the highest joy, at being at length relieved from the anxiety of dependence, and the fears of want; while my lord prepared to pay his duty at her grace's levee, and see whether any thing should offer that might promote his part of it.

When he was ready to go, he called to his lady to receive her advice, and, recollecting that he had forgot his purse, he desired to borrow her's, in which I was, and thus I changed my service once more.

When his lordship entered her grace's levee, and had paid his most humble respects, he found the conversation turn on a melancholy accident that had lately happened to a village in his diocese, which was entirely burnt to the ground by an accidental fire. There were many circumstances so moving in the account of this misfortune, as to raise the compassion

of the whole company, and particularly of her grace, who said, that she would most willingly contribute to the relief of their distress, but that unluckily she had not less than a bank-note for twenty pounds about her.

All the company, who knew the world, understood her grace, and dropped the subject; but my new master, who had his knowledge of mankind mostly from books, was so far from taking the hint, that he thought he shewed his respect to his patroness, by offering to change her note, or lend her whatever money she wanted.

Her grace was surprised, as the company were confounded, at the ignorant insolence of such an offer. However, as this was not an occasion for shewing her resentment, she coldly told him, she would trouble him for the change, and having received it, gave two guineas to the person who had mentioned the affair, and carelessly threw the rest, among which I was, into her pocket, not caring to pull out her purse, as it was full of money.

My late master, pleased with the thought of having been instrumental in so meritorious a benevolence, displayed his eloquence in thanks to her for her eminent charity to his poor flock, and then gave a guinea himself; (for respect to her grace would not permit him to exceed the half of her bounty) as did the rest of the company, who all laughed in their sleeves, to think how my master had ruined himself with her grace by his blunder.

But his mind was too full of the dream to observe their looks, and he was so far from being sensible that he had done amiss, that when her grace was

going to retire, he boldly stepped up to her, and begged leave to speak a word or two with her in private.

Though the assurance of this request greatly aggravated his former offence, yet she could not decently refuse such a favour to his rank, and therefore slightly nodded to him to follow her.

CHAPTER XLVII.

The bishop obtains the honour of a private audience. His extensive charity. He makes her grace his almoner, to relieve his fellow protestants in Germany. He is strangely affected at the news of the archbishop's recovery. Her grace's character.

The great honour of this private audience, at first, put him into some confusion, but, recollecting the consequence at stake, he, after much hesitation, made a shift to tell her, that, 'sensible of her grace's great 'humanity and commiseration for the sufferings of 'the distressed, of which she had just given so noble 'an instance.'—'Pray, my lord, no compliments,' said her grace, interrupting him with a look and accent not very encouraging, 'I am not at present at 'leisure for them, and if you have no other business' —'May it please your grace,' replied the bishop, 'your virtues are above compliment! and I come to 'give you an opportunity of exerting them, not solely 'to praise them.'—'I do not understand you, my

'lord; and I am in some haste.'—'I most humbly 'beg your grace's pardon, I shall not delay you long! 'To come then briefly to the purpose, I must inform 'your grace, that out of the income which it hath 'pleased the Divine Providence, through your grace's 'means to give me, I have thought it my duty to lay 'by some little matter, to make a return with, to the 'Divine beneficence, in charity to his distressed 'creatures. Now, as your grace's kind interest was 'the means through which this ability was conferred 'upon me, I have made bold to trouble you with the 'distribution of my mite.'—'Me, my lord? You 'astonish me! I cannot comprehend you!'—'I beg 'your grace's indulgence for a moment. You will 'forgive this boldness, when you know the motive! '—hem! hem!

'The sufferings of my *Protestant* brethren in Ger- 'many, (I say brethren, for men should know no dis- 'tinction, but religion), their sufferings, I say in this 'calamitous time of war and rapine, when the ambi- 'tion of princes works the ruin of their people, has 'made such an impression upon my heart, that I 'come to offer this small matter to your grace, to be 'applied to their relief, as your better knowledge 'shall see most proper: a trouble which I should not 'have presumed to give your grace, did not I know 'that such works of charity are a pleasure to you; 'and that the better information, which in your high 'rank you must necessarily have, will enable you to 'apply it more effectually to their relief than I, in the 'darkness and ignorance of my humble station, pos- 'sibly can. I am almost ashamed of the smallness 'of the sum, (it is but two thousand pounds) but it is 'all that I have yet been able to save; though I hope 'to give a better account of my stewardship another 'time; and that I shall be found not to have buried

'my talent, especially if it should please the Divine 'Providence to raise me to a higher station, and 'thereby put the means more liberally into my power.

'I most humbly beg your grace's forgiveness of 'this intrusion of your time. I am your grace's 'most humble servant.' 'Stay, my lord,' returned her grace, with a look and accent softened into the most engaging affability. 'Pray do not go; I see 'you so seldom, except *in the crowd*, that I cannot 'part with you so soon. I thank you for the con-'fidence you place in me; and shall apply your cha-'rity to the best of my judgment. Poor people! 'they greatly want relief, and if the invincible forti-'tude of the *Bulgarian* monarch does not extricate 'them soon, they will be entirely ruined. But every 'thing is to be hoped for from such a hero

'You are very good to consider the distresses of 'the poor people: there are few now who think of 'any thing but themselves; so their appetites are 'satisfied, they have no feeling for what others suffer. 'But, my lord, is there any thing that I can serve 'you in? You may depend upon my interest at all 'times.' 'I am much beholden to your grace,' re-plied his lordship, elevated at such an offer, and now secure as he thought of his hopes; 'I am much be-'holden to your grace! I have had too much expe-'rience of your grace's goodness to doubt it. No-'thing that I know of at present: if any thing should 'happen, I shall be most grateful to your grace for 'your kind remembrance. We are all desirous of 'having our power to do good enlarged.'

'Yes, my lord; all good men, like your lordship, 'are. It is a duty to desire so. But, have you 'heard any thing of the Archbishop of —— lately?'

'Not very lately, please your grace.' 'I believe 'that old man will never die! He was taken with 'a fit yesterday, and it was thought he would expire 'every moment, but he has got over it, and is abroad 'to-day as well as he has been for many years.' 'In—d-e-e-d!' 'What is the matter, my lord? 'Something seems to ail you.' 'A—a—sud-den— 'f—aint—ness has—come—o—o-ver—me; I— 'mu-st—beg—y—our—Grace—'s—p-ardon—. I '—am y—our—Grace—'s—m—ost—h—h—umble 'servant—.' With which words he made a bad shift to crawl out, muttering to himself—'O my 'money! my money! O this cursed dream! my 'money! my money!'

Her grace looked earnestly after him for a few minutes, as if lost in thought, and then bursting into a loud laughter, 'And is it so, my good lord? does 'the wind sit that way? Then I can account for 'your charity: ha! ha! ha! But you are disap-'pointed this time, and, I fear, will be the next too, 'if you do not bid better. Two thousand for five 'hundred a year! Is that your conscience? But 'it will never do.'

I was now at the summit of human grandeur, the favourite of the favourite of a mighty monarch. For curiosity tempting me to take a view of my new mistress's heart, as she sat at her toilet, I found myself established there without a rival, in the most absolute authority, every passion being subservient to my rule; even the love of power, which had, in every other instance, disputed the empire with me, being here my most abject slave, and encouraged for no other reason than solely to promote my interest; the mighty spirit of the immense mass of gold which my mistress had accumulated having taken entire possession of her soul.

CHAPTER XLVIII.

The true use of court favour. The biter bitten. An easy way to obtain a fine feather for a fool's cap. The insolence of office, in hindering a house to be built instead of a hen coop; and spoiling her grace's dairy. How to make the most of a common. A beau lord beaten by a bailiff, for walking the fields in an undress.

WHILE my late master retired, to meditate on the exposition of dreams, and to please himself with the virtuous reflection of so singular an act of charity, her grace sat down to her toilet, where I saw art triumph over the depredations of time, and create a beauty denied by nature.

When this serious work was so far completed that she could attend to other business, one of her most favourite domestics told her, that she had that very morning received an offer from a man who kept a noted beer-house, and shuffle-board, for the place of a tapster to the Lord-Mayor, which she was sure her grace's interest would readily obtain. 'Tapster!' answered her grace, 'what is the value of that place? 'Reach me the list of employments, with their sala-'ries and perquisites, out of that drawer. Let me 'see: Tapster to the Lord-Mayor: aye, here it is! 'Well, and pray what does he offer for it?'—'A 'thousand guineas, please your grace,' replied her

woman, 'which I really think enough for it, considering every thing.'—'Do you, indeed! But I do not. 'Why it is rated to me here, as worth five hundred 'pounds a-year; and is that worth no more than a 'thousand guineas! Does the fellow value his own 'life only at two years' purchase?'—'Five hundred 'pounds a-year! How can that be? The salary is 'no more than sixty; there must be some mistake in 'your return.'—'The salary, the salary signifies 'nothing; it is the perquisites! The perquisites are 'the thing? Do you think any place is valued by the 'salary? The perquisites of this place are very considerable! Let me see: Why, he buys in all the beer 'and gin himself, for which he can charge what price 'he pleases; and then his own account is taken for 'the quantity that is drank. Aye indeed: there 'must be a mistake in my return to be sure; but not 'of the kind you mean. The place is rated too low; 'for, with such opportunities, it must be worth twice 'the sum; and I shall inquire into that matter before 'I dispose of the place. A thousand guineas for such 'a place! I wonder at the fellow's conscience to 'make such an offer!'—'All this is very true; but 'then there are some circumstances that must be 'considered on the other hand too. You know the 'Lord-Mayor's year is almost ended; and then, who 'knows whether his successor will continue all the 'servants or not? This one it certainly is most likely 'he will not; for as he is a known enemy to gambling, and has publicly declared that he will put the 'laws in execution against all such practices, it cannot be thought that he will permit a fellow who has 'kept an house that has been so notorious for it, and 'where so many men have been brought to the gallows, and their families to beggary, to hold a place 'of such profit under him; besides, he has people of 'his own to provide for, who have served his father

'and himself in such a manner as to deserve his confidence and regard, so that every chance, to speak 'in his own way, is against this man, which is so 'well known, that nobody else would bid for the 'thing at all; wherefore, if I may presume to speak 'my opinion, his offer should be immediately accepted.'—'There may be something in what you say; 'but then, if it was so very precarious a place, do you 'think some of his customers would not inform him 'of it? they certainly must know it.'—'Why, the 'very reason of my desiring your grace to close with 'him directly is, for fear they should tell him, as they 'undoubtedly would, if they suspected his intention 'in the least; but he conceals it from them; for the 'principal motive of his quitting the business he is 'in, and seeking this place, is, because the greatest 'part of his customers have got deeply into his debt, 'which he can never expect them to pay, while he 'continues his business; whereas, he thinks, if he 'can get this place, it will be a good excuse for his 'calling in his money, and then the Lord-Mayor's 'power will protect him from their resentments. 'This is the true secret of the matter; for, if it was 'not on this account, he has a much better opportunity of getting money where he is, than in any 'place.'

'Well then, be it so! make the most you can of 'it, and I care not how soon the fellow is turned out 'after.—What is the matter? What do you laugh at?' —'I beg your grace's pardon, an odd thought just 'came in my head, but it does not signify.'—'What 'is it? Come, I must know it.'—'Why, I am almost 'ashamed to mention it; though it is but a trifle neither, as such matters go now. Your grace knows 'that my husband has a place under the lord-mayor. 'Now it just came into my head, that, when his lord-

'ship comes to wait upon the king, to be knighted, 'it would be no bad joke, if his majesty could be 'prevailed on to knight my husband also.'—'Ha! 'ha! ha! And so madam has a mind to be a lady. 'Why, with all my heart. There is no great matter 'in it to be sure! and I see no reason why you 'should not have that title as well as a chandler, or 'shoemaker's wife. Indeed, the candidates for 'knighthood have run so very low of late, that a man 'of honour should be ashamed to accept of it. But 'that is no concern of mine. I get the money, and 'where I can do that, I care not if it was from Jack 'Ketch: let others look to that. Well: since you 'have taken a fancy to stick a fool's feather in your 'cap, tell your good man, when he kneels by his 'master at the important ceremony, not to be too 'hasty to rise, and I'll take care that your ambition 'shall be satisfied; though I do not know what we 'must do then. Your *ladyship* will never con-'descend to put on my shoes, or take away the bed-'pan: so that I believe I must look out for another 'servant.'—'Your grace is pleased to joke; but you 'are very well convinced that I have no ambition 'above your service; and shall ever be proud to 'perform the meanest offices about you. Indeed, 'in this affair, I have more respect to your grace's 'honour, than to myself. While I wait upon you '(and I would not give up that to be made a countess) 'I am but your servant, let me be called by what title 'I will: but then, I think it is not proper that you 'should be waited on by common servants, like any 'other person of your apparent rank. As you are 'the fountain of all honour and nobility, you should 'have nobles to attend you as well as knights, if I 'could have my wish. And it was this tenderness 'of your grace's honour that made me so particularly 'affected at what happened yesterday.'—'Yester-

'day I do not understand you! What happened 'yesterday?'—'Your grace may remember that you 'were so kind some time ago as to obtain leave for 'me, from the lord of the manor, to build a little 'poultry house in a corner of yonder common field. 'I accordingly set the masons to work, and, liking 'the situation, thought it was no great trespass to 'enlarge the yard a little, and build a lodge, with a 'room or two, where I could have my clothes washed, 'and drink a dish of tea with a friend at any time 'when I might have a mind to be retired; but, 'behold, after the wall of the yard was built, and the 'lodge raised as high as the first story, the bailiff of 'the manor happened to come by, and, seeing what 'I intended, had the insolence to fly into a passion, 'and, saying it was an encroachment beyond the 'leave I had obtained, obliged the workmen to pull 'down every stone they had laid, though I myself, 'on receiving notice of it, went there, and told him 'it was by your grace's order, and for your own use, 'and alledged the expense you had been at; but it 'was all to no purpose, for he would not leave the 'place till his orders were executed: nor was this 'all; he has had the assurance also to send me word 'this very morning that he will distrain the cows, that 'you desired me to put to graze in that field, if I do 'not directly pay for their pasture, according to the 'rate he is pleased to charge; which is more than I 'have been able to make of the milk; though, by 'your grace's recommendation, I have had such 'good customers for it; so that instead of the profit 'I expected to make for you of your dairy, your 'grace is like to be a loser.'—'Insolent, unreason-'able fellow! Not to be content with his own extra-'vagant profits, without hindering every body else of 'coming in for the least advantage with him: but he 'has neither shame nor conscience, or else he would

'be satisfied with plundering the ponds, and selling 'the fish, and hiring out the grass as he does, with- 'out putting the parish to the expense of fencing in 'the common, to prevent the people even from walk- 'ing over the grass! But, I may, some time or other, 'find a way to be even with him. He stands but 'badly in his master's favour, who despises such 'avarice, and would turn him out of his place 'directly, but that unluckily he has it, under his 'hand, for life; however, I shall watch every oppor- 'tunity to return him the compliment; that I can 'assure him. Let him take such liberties with his 'equals! I'll have him to know that he shall treat 'me with more respect.'

'That is true! Has your grace heard how cava- 'lierly he behaved lately to the young Lord ——? 'I forget his name. The great beau that made such 'a noise by dangling after the gentleman's wife.' 'I 'know whom you mean: no! I have heard nothing 'about him: what has been the matter?' 'Ha! 'ha! ha! I do not believe I shall be able to tell it 'for laughing. Why, your grace must know, that 'the beau was walking one morning, in a very plain 'dress, across the upper part of the common, where 'happening to meet a farmer's maid, going to drive 'home her cows, he entered into chat with her, and 'prevailed upon her to quit the path, and walk with 'him to an unfrequented part of the field, where they 'sat down under a clump of trees, for the sake of a 'little very innocent conversation, to be sure. Well; 'they had not been there long, when one of the 'under bailiffs, whom this insolent fellow keeps to 'watch the grass, seeing them go out of the road, 'followed them; and coming upon them in a very unseasonable minute, not only interrupted their 'conversation, but also asked the lord (whose qua-

'lity he never suspected) in an imperious manner, 'how he dared to trample the grass, and threatened 'to take him and his whore before a justice, and 'have them directly sent to Bridewell. This insult 'aggravated the offence of his intrusion to such a 'height, that the lord in a rage bade the scoundrel 'instantly get out of his sight, or he would break his 'head. Such words, from a person of his appear-'ance, raised the insolence of office so high, that the 'bailiff, without any more ado, lifted his staff, and 'knocked his lordship down, where he belaboured 'him severely, repeating the word scoundrel between 'every blow, till the poor battered beau was in a 'most doleful plight, though he had often told him 'who he was, and roared out his quality with all his 'might; but the enraged fellow either did not, or 'pretended that he did not, believe him.

'When he had beaten him as much as he thought 'he could, without danger of the gallows, he dragged 'him along to the highway, where fortunately a coach 'happened to come by, the owner of which knew 'his lordship, and took him up, ordering his servants 'to apprehend the bailiff, but he was too nimble for 'them, and made his escape: and now finding his 'mistake, and the danger into which he had fallen, 'he went directly to his master, and telling him the 'story in the most favourable manner for himself, 'prevailed upon him to promise to stand by him; 'particularly as he alleged that the affair had pro-'ceeded from his great care of his master's grass, 'which could never be kept, if he should be left to 'suffer for defending it.

'In the mean time, the poor lord was in so very 'bad a taking, that all the physicians and surgeons 'in town were gathered about him; by whose assist-

Drawn by E.F. Burney. W. Read. Sc.

ADVENTURES OF A GUINEA.

The insolence of the Baliff to the Young Lord.

'ance he was confined to his bed for near a week. 'As soon as he was permitted to speak, and see his 'friends, he sent directly to the head bailiff, to let 'him know how his man had used him; but all the 'satisfaction he could obtain, even when he went 'and applied in person, was to have the fellow re-'moved to another part of the common; nor could 'he obtain this, till he declared that he would make 'his complaint directly to the lord of the manor, if he 'had not some redress. It is said, he talked of 'challenging him, but he is one of the grand jury of 'the court-leet, and therefore cannot be called to an 'account that way.'

CHAPTER XLIX.

An odd visitor to a lady. The mystery of stock-jobbing. Charity begins at home. Her grace's kind intentions for honest Aminadab. Another visitor. The worth of honour. The best salve for a broken character.

BY this time the mysteries of the toilet were over, and my mistress's face finished for the day, when a person entered to her, whose appearance was far from promising such an intimacy with a lady of her rank.

The most shabby, squalid dress, covered a distorted carcass, not much above four feet high, but so gross, that, laid upon his back he would have cast

a shadow near as long as when he stood upright. A deep olive complexion, an aquiline nose, and a mouth from ear to ear, fringed round with a greasy curled beard, made the beauty of his face correspond with the elegance of his figure.

This extraordinary person approached her grace without introduction or ceremony, and, entering immediately upon business, told her, 'that he came 'to know if she meant to *buy in* that day, for the 'report raised in the alley, by *their* express from 'abroad, had given such a stroke to the funds, that 'they had tumbled to the ground; but would most 'certainly rise again the next day, as soon as the 'news which had arrived that morning should be 'known; which could not be kept a secret as the 'people wanted something to keep up their spirits 'among so many miscarriages, and divert them from 'making too close inquiries into the conduct of 'affairs.'

'Why, my honest friend *Aminadab!*' replied her grace, 'I must be directed in these matters by you. 'If you think there is any thing to be got by *buying* 'in to-day, with all my heart: though I must own I 'cannot conceive why you should *sell out* the very 'last week to *buy in* this.'

'Ah! my lady,' returned Aminadab, 'there is a 'mystery in all business, and in none greater than 'ours. The *Bulgarian* king's success last week 'raised people's spirits so high, that they thought the 'world was to be all their own, and therefore bought 'at any price. Now that was the time for a prudent 'person to sell, as I advised your grace; which we 'had no sooner done, than instantly comes an ex-'press *(of our own)* with an account that the enemy

'had turned upon him in their retreat, and entirely 'vanquished the vanquishers.

'This news quite overthrew the spirits raised by 'the former, and made every one eager to sell out 'at any loss, for fear the enemy should *get wings* '*and fly over*, to take all they had. Now, as this 'was but a terror raised by ourselves, we take the 'advantage of it, and so buy in, when others are 'selling out at twenty per cent. cheaper than we 'ourselves sold out last week, when the madness 'bent the other way, and may perhaps sell again the 'next, when another packet shall set things right, 'and bring the people back their senses. For the 'senses of the people of this country are as inconstant 'as the sea, depending entirely upon the winds that 'blow them news.'

'But, is it really possible that any people can be 'such fools?' 'Oh! please your grace, they are 'only too rich! they have more money than they 'know what to do with; that is all.' 'Then Ami-'nadab, we will ease them of some of the burthen. 'And would it not be better to conceal this news for 'another day; might not that make them fall still 'lower?' 'But, my lady, the people want the good 'news.' 'The people may hang themselves in de-'spair! I care not, so I get money.' 'The govern-'ment, though.' 'What is the government to me? 'I will get all I can, and then leave them to them-'selves, to sink or swim as they will; it is all one to 'me.' 'That is true; your grace says right. A 'people who do not know, or, at least, will not fol-'low their own interest, are not worth any person's 'care, longer than while he can make something of 'them. But we must reserve that stroke for another 'time. This news has got into the offices, and

'nothing there is a secret, you know. Besides, the 'panic was too violent to last; it begins to wear off 'already: in another day they would recover their 'senses of themselves. I think, therefore, with 'your grace's approbation, to buy in all I can to-'day; without you had rather lay out your money 'in the supplies for the protestants of Germany.'— 'With all my heart, if you can make as much of it 'that way as in the funds; but not otherwise. I 'would not lose one shilling for any people under 'heaven?'

'Your grace has a just notion of the world, and 'of the value of money that governs it. Indeed, I 'must say, that the terms for these supplies are very 'unreasonable, considering how such things have 'been done for some time past. It is expected that 'people should bring in their money without any 'premium, or other advantage, than what was pub-'licly calculated for, at the granting them. But 'these economists will find themselves mistaken. 'The world is wiser now a-days than to give up 'advantages which they have once gotten possession 'of. As to that affair, therefore, I should think it 'better to let it stand a little longer, till the neces-'sity becomes more urgent, and then they will be 'glad to come into our terms, if it were not that the 'poor people may be ruined in the mean time; so 'that indeed I am at a loss what to advise your grace 'to do in so nice an affair.'

'Why, let them be ruined, then: it is not my 'fault; nor is it my business to save them; nor will 'I part with a shilling to do it. Besides, if they do 'suffer by the delay, those who gave them this sup-'ply to prevent their ruin, may give them another to 'repair it.' 'I cannot but admire your grace's

'judgment in all things. You are above the foolish 'weakness of nature, and have the noble resolution 'to see your own family perish, rather than injure 'your own interest to relieve them. I shall obey 'your grace in all things. I go now to *the* alley, 'where business will soon begin.' 'Do, honest 'Aminadab, and fear not, though I could not pro-'cure an establishment for your whole nation, as I 'would have done, I certainly will for your family, 'and that is enough for you. Your son shall be 'made a *baronet* at least, you have riches enough to 'support the title.' 'Your grace is very good; our 'people are all satisfied of your kind intentions: but, 'alas! that was a severe disappointment to us, after 'costing us so much money. The children of the 'lord weep over it in their synagogues, and the 'daughters of Sion lament it in their songs; but my 'household shall rejoice in thy favour, and the labours 'of my life prove my gratitude for it.'

Honest Aminadab was no sooner gone, than there entered an agent, seemingly of another nature, this dealing in honour, as the other did in money; but the difference between them was only in appearance, the end of both being ultimately the same.

'May it please your grace,' said he, advancing with due reverence and ceremony, 'I come to wait 'upon you about that place in the ———: that gen-'tleman will not, indeed cannot, give one shilling 'more for it.' 'Then, let the other have it; I will 'not lose five-pence, much less five hundred pounds, 'for him.' 'But, please your grace, you know what 'grounds he has to expect it on; besides your pro-'mise, which cannot well be broken through, it was 'so positive.' 'My promise was only conditional '(in my own intention) that he should give me as

'much as another, and in no other sense will I keep 'it. As for his grounds of expectations I regard 'them not: let him make the most of them where he 'can.' 'Just as your grace pleases; I only took 'the liberty of speaking my own opinion, but always 'in submission to your's. Not but I must own I am 'apprehensive of this gentleman's resentment, though 'not immediately for myself, so much as for your 'grace's character, with which he may be provoked 'to make too free upon such an affair.' 'Ah! that 'is liberty, your boasted English liberty, to speak 'disrespectfully of your superiors. But I despise 'whatever he can say; nor will I give up my own 'way for fear of his impertinence.' 'Very right, 'your grace is very right. It were by no means fit 'that you should; then it is to be considered, whe-'ther this breach of promise may not be attended 'with inconveniences that may overbalance the ad-'vantage, as it may make others afraid to deal with 'you at another time.' 'I will venture that: none 'can come to me but for their own advantage, and 'while they can find that, they will scarce stay away 'for punctilios. So, let me hear no more of this, 'but close with the other directly.'

'Will not your grace please to abate of your 'demand for that place in Ireland? I really fear you 'rate it too high.' 'Not a shilling: I will not abate 'a shilling: surely I ought to know the value of 'things in Ireland by this time; I have had sufficient 'dealings there to teach me; it has been my privy 'purse for many years.' 'But what I fear is, that if 'your grace does not fix upon some one directly, the 'lord deputy may, and that would disappoint you; 'for this place has ever been immediately in his gift, 'and it would reflect a kind of dishonour on him to 'give it up.' Dishonour, indeed! I am much con-

'cerned for his honour, certainly: and as for his 'naming any one to contradict me, I believe he will 'be cautious how he does that. The example of his 'predecessor will teach him.' 'However, if your 'grace pleases to prevent any disputes, I will wait 'on him, and tell him that you have a friend, whom 'you design to recommend.' 'With all my heart; 'you may if you will. But, as to the price, I will 'not abate one shilling, as I said before. Do not I 'know that places in that country are either mere 'pensions, without any thing to do; or even neces- 'sity of ever governing there at all: or where that 'cannot be dispensed with from the nature of the 'place, that no learning, no abilities are requisite. 'If it was here, indeed, where knowledge in a pro- fession is absolutely necessary to a place in it, there 'might be something in higgling about the price, but 'for a coward to scruple paying for being made a 'general, or a blockhead a judge, there can be 'nothing more unreasonable; and I will not hear 'another word about it. But what have you done 'about those titles which I gave you to dispose of?' 'Really, I do not know what to say to your grace 'about them: the bent of the people does not seem 'to incline to honours of late.' 'No, I thought they 'were always as good as ready money; especially 'with those who have more money than sense, and 'think it easier to buy, than earn honour by merit. An Irish title was the constant refuge of those sons 'of fortune, who not being born in the rank of gen- 'tlemen, or having forfeited it by their villanies, were 'desirous of changing their names for sonorous titles, 'to hide their disgrace, as it were, under an heap of 'honours, which in reality only make them the more 'exposed to the view, and consequently to the cen- 'sure of the world. But I find even that imaginary 'sense of honour is gone out of fashion, and the

'shadow is in no more request than the substance, 'at present. But since they are grown such a drug, 'even make the most you can of them: sell them to 'whoever will buy; I shall take no exceptions to 'persons.'

'I shall certainly do the best I can for your grace, though they have been so oddly given away of late, 'that I verily believe people are ashamed of taking 'them, for fear of being laughed at. Rattles are 'given to children, but titles to old men, to divert 'them; to some, in reward for not doing *the very* 'worst possibly in their power; and to others, for 'doing *nothing at all*. But pray, has your grace 'seen the old colonel yet? He got his commission 'yesterday: I wish he may mean your grace fairly. 'Why? sure you do not imagine he can have the 'assurance to think of playing me a trick?' 'I do 'not positively say so; but his behaviour has been 'very mysterious.'

Just then a servant let her grace know, that the very colonel, of whom they were talking, desired leave to wait upon her. 'I thought so,' said she, 'show him up: I thought he would not dare to trifle 'with *me*.'

CHAPTER L.

The colonel puts the old soldier upon her grace. Her rage and resentment fall upon her agent. Her judicious application of the bishop's charity, with her tender concern for her friends abroad.

The colonel advanced to her grace with the assurance of conscious virtue sparkling in his eye, though sharpened by a cast of indignation. 'I come,' said he, 'please your grace, to return you my thanks for 'your favours: I have got my commission, and had 'the honour, just now, to kiss his majesty's hand 'upon it. As your recommendation was more effec-'tual to procure me this reward than the labours of 'a life which has not been undistinguished in the 'service, I thought it my duty to make your grace 'this acknowledgment, and to offer you any service 'in the power of an honest heart, and no bad hand in 'return.' 'Colonel,' replied her grace, 'I am glad 'it has been in my power to serve a man of your 'character, and I do not desire any such return.' 'I am much obliged to your grace for your good 'opinion,' returned he, 'which I hope I shall never 'forfeit. I thank God, my character will not dis-'grace your recommendation; nor shall you ever 'have reason to blush at the mention of my name. 'I have the honour to be your grace's most humble 'servant.'

'But, colonel,' said the gentleman, the agent, who stood by, 'though her grace has no occasion for such 'a return as you offer, having no quarrels to be 'fought, there is a return of another nature which 'you should not forget, especially as you promised 'it too.' 'Why, look you, sir,' replied the colonel, 'as to that matter, it is most certain that I did, some-'thing like, promise some such thing, but when I 'have told the whole affair honestly to her grace, I 'am sure she will be above demanding it.' 'Sir,' said her grace, 'I do not desire to hear any thing 'more about it! and I must tell you, that you have 'behaved like an old knave.'—'Say an old soldier, 'rather, madam,' replied he, with some warmth, 'the 'other is a term I am not used to.' 'A nice distinc-'tion truly, and well worthy of a man of honour,' said the agent with a sneer. 'Have a care, sir, guard 'your expressions; my respect, my obligations to 'her grace will make me bear any thing from 'her; but I must be so free as to tell you, that 'I have not the same sentiments for you.' 'What 'are you going to make a riot in my apart-'ments!' 'Not in the least, madam; my respect 'for your grace is a sufficient security from that. I 'would only hint it to that gentleman, that he may 'not always have the protection of your grace's pre-'sence; that is all, madam.' 'You are a knavish old 'ruffian. But I shall take care that you do not come 'off so.' 'As your grace pleases for that. By the 'laws of my country I cannot lose my commission 'while I do my duty, nor will my gracious master be 'influenced to do me wrong, though, in the mul-'tiplicity of greater affairs, my services, my hard-'ships could not reach his eye. But as I would 'not bear the imputation of any crime, much more 'so black ones as dishonesty or ingratitude, you 'must give me leave to set this affair in a just light

'to your grace now, especially as I may never 'have another opportunity of doing myself that 'justice.

'Enraged almost to desperation to find, that thirty 'years' service, the merits of which were often 'written in my blood, and stand recorded in these 'scars, were not sufficient to procure me the regular 'advances of my rank, without a merit of another 'nature, I resolved to quit the barren paths which I 'had so long pursued in vain, and try those methods 'which I saw practised with success by others: I 'therefore applied myself to your grace, who seemed 'struck with my hardships, and promised me your 'favour, referring me, for more particular informa-'tion, to this gentleman, who would have lowered 'my sense of your goodness, by loading it with terms 'which were not in my power to fulfil.

'Had your grace mentioned them to me yourself, 'I should most certainly have owned my inability; 'but, coming from him, I looked upon them as the 'finesse of his own art, which it was not unjustifiable 'to return with a feint of mine; and therefore I gave 'an equivocal acquiescence with his proposal, for he 'dares not say I made a particular or positive pro-'mise of any thing.

'If I have done wrong in this I am mistaken, and 'sorry for it, but still it is not within the article of 'war, that makes an error in judgment criminal, 'because it was not against an enemy; but by all 'the rules of war, and that is my profession, and the 'only one I have studied, it is allowable to oppose 'art to art, and try to foil the devil at his own 'weapons. This is what I have done; and the suc-'cess of this stratagem, which has effected by a

'*coup de main* what I had been making regular 'advances to so long in vain, proves the justness of 'my plan, and must extort your grace's approbation, 'when the passion raised by this gentleman's merce-'nary influence shall cool.'

Saying this the veteran marched off in triumph, leaving my mistress and her agent staring at each other in the strongest surprise.

Her grace found *utterance* first, and having no other object of her rage, turned all its violence upon her agent. 'So then,' said she, 'after all, I find the 'old ruffian has outwitted you, with a general pro-'mise, or no promise at all, it seems, for you did not 'dare to contradict him. I thought, Sir, that I had 'cautioned you before against this very thing, and 'given you positive orders to take nothing but the 'money. But you shall pay for your neglect: you 'shall make good the loss to me. As for the old 'ruffian, I will speak to his general, and have him 'broke for a cheat. Talk to me of his services! 'what are his services to me? But I will have him 'broke; his example shall terrify others from 'attempting to abuse me so again.'

'I wish it were proper or possible,' replied her agent, as soon as want of breath made her stop, 'for 'your grace to have him punished for his insolence; but such a tongue as his might lay matters too open, 'if once set a-going, for you see he is not to be over-'awed to any thing. As for his commission, there 'is no loss in it; for it was ordered for him before I 'applied; though I made him think it was obtained 'by your interest, to try what I could bring him to. 'Your grace may be assured that I would not have 'taken any promise, had it been otherwise; and I

'was just going to tell you this, when his coming 'prevented me.' 'It may be so,' returned she, 'but 'I shall be better satisfied of it, before I give up your 'making good the loss.'

The agent was relieved from further persecution for that time by the entrance of a messenger, who was going to Germany, and called to know if her grace had any commands for her friends there. 'None 'but my good wishes and prayers for their deliver-'ance,' replied she, with a deep sigh, 'which are 'constantly offered up for them. I am sorry I am 'not able to send them any relief from myself; but 'I have nothing in my power, no places, no oppor-'tunities of getting any thing: these few pieces,' taking about a dozen guineas from her pocket, where she had thrown the bishop's change of her note, 'are all, at present, in my possession; give them to 'my dear mother, with my duty, and tell her I will 'send the clothes she wrote for, as soon as possible; 'and assure the rest of my friends of my constant 'attention to their interest.'

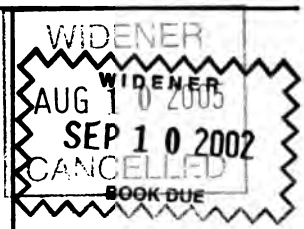
END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

Printed by HOWLETT and BRIMMER,
10, Frith Street, Soho Square.

The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

Non-receipt of overdue notices does ***not*** *exempt the borrower from overdue fines.*

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413



Please handle with care.
Thank you for helping to preserve library collections at Harvard.